Course Notes for Stochastic Processes

by Russell Lyons

Based on the book by Sheldon Ross

These are notes that I used myself to lecture from. A modified version was handed to the students, which is reflected in various changes of fonts and marginal hacks in this version. These things were not in their version. In particular, certain things were omitted and they were given space to write things that either were in my notes or on which I expanded in class.

The first part of the course contains some material that is not taught when one semester is devoted to the whole course.

Prerequisites: Undergraduate probability, up through joint density of continuous random variables. You should be comfortable with undergraduate real analysis/advanced calculus, meaning proofs and “epsilonics”, in order to understand some of the derivations, although you will almost never have to do epsilonics yourself. You will be asked to do calculations as well as derivations in this course. It will be crucial to understand probabilistic concepts; they make calculations much easier and strengthen your intuition. An introduction to measure theory is not needed and will not be assumed, but would add to your understanding if you happen to have had it or are taking it concurrently.

The textbook is by S. Ross, Stochastic Processes, 2nd ed., 1996. We will cover Chapters 1–4 and 8 fairly thoroughly, and Chapters 5–7 in part. Other books that will be used as sources of examples are Introduction to Probability Models, 7th ed., by Ross (to be abbreviated as “PM”) and Modeling and Analysis of Stochastic Systems by V.G. Kulkarni (to be abbreviated as “MASS”). You do not need get them. The material of the course is extremely useful in practice, and also a lot of fun. We will give examples that are designed to illustrate both of these (not always at the same time).

Grades will be based on weekly homework, two exams (to be scheduled outside of class if we can find times that work for everyone), and a final exam (Thu., May 4, from 3–5pm).

These notes follow the book fairly closely. In particular, all numbering (such as of sections and theorems) follows that in the book. However, the notes often provide
proofs that are shorter or more conceptual than the ones in the book. The book tends
to prefer proofs that rely on calculation, despite the excellent intuition and concepts that
are introduced. On the other hand, these notes are sometimes sketchy, with more details
to be given in class. (There are blank spaces often left for you to fill in details as we go.)
Sometimes, entire chapters are done differently in these notes than in the book.

Occasionally, we need to assign numbers to equations that do not appear in the book.
These will be preceded by “N” (for “notes”).

5” Definition of stochastic process. Examples and graphs. ...  

Example MASS 1.3 (Single-Server Queue). Here we begin with 2 stochastic pro-
cesses as input and study several others derived from them. Suppose that the nth customer
arrives at time $A_n$ and, once service begins, takes time $S_n$ to be served. There is a single
server who serves the customers in the order of their arrival, each one until finished. We
want to study $Q(t)$, the number of customers in the system at time $t$; the time of departure
$D_n$ of the nth customer; and the waiting time of the nth customer, $W_n := D_n - A_n$.

Draw graph of arrival and departure times on the horizontal axis with length
of queue on the vertical axis. ...
Chapter 1

Preliminaries

§1.1. Probability.

The axioms of probability are that there is a “sample space” $\Omega$ (or $S$) containing all possible outcomes and a function $P$ that assigns to subsets of $\Omega$ (called “events”) a number in $[0, 1]$ such that

(i) $P(\Omega) = 1$ and

(ii) if $E_1, E_2, \ldots$ are disjoint events, then

$$P(\bigcup_{n=1}^{\infty} E_n) = \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} P(E_n).$$

[Actually, sometimes only certain subsets of $\Omega$ can be given a probability, but that will not concern us. Part of the development of measure theory elucidates this issue.]

The axioms imply the particularly useful consequences:

1" (i) $P(\emptyset) = 0$. 

1" (ii) If $E \subseteq F$, then $P(E) \leq P(F)$. 

1" (iii) $P(E^c) = 1 - P(E)$. 

1" (iv) (subadditivity) For any events $E_n$, we have

$$P\left( \bigcup_{n=1}^{\infty} E_n \right) \leq \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} P(E_n).$$

1" 

1" (v) If $P(E_n) = 0$, then $P(\bigcup E_n) = 0$. If $P(E_n) = 1$, then $P(\bigcap E_n) = 1$. 

PROPOSITION 1.1.1. If $E_n \uparrow E$ or $E_n \downarrow E$, then $P(E_n) \to P(E)$.

Proof. In the first case that $E_n \uparrow E$, write $E$ as a disjoint union $\bigcup (E_{n+1} \setminus E_n)$. (See the figure.) 

When $E_n \downarrow E$, use $E_n^c \uparrow E^c$. 

If you flip a sequence of coins and the $n$th coin has chance $1/n^2$ of landing H, will you get an infinite number of heads? What if the chance is $1/n$? To answer these questions, we prove the Borel–Cantelli Lemmas.

3" Explain limsup and liminf of sequence of sets. ...

**Proposition 1.1.2 (First Borel–Cantelli Lemma).** If $\sum_n P(E_n) < \infty$, then $P(E_n \text{ i.o.}) = 0$.

**Proof.** We have

$$P(E_n \text{ i.o.}) = P\left(\bigcap_{n \geq 1} \bigcup_{k \geq n} E_k\right) = \lim_n P\left(\bigcup_{k \geq n} E_k\right) \leq \liminf_n \sum_{k \geq n} P(E_k) = 0.$$ 

2" ...

**Proposition 1.1.3 (Second Borel–Cantelli Lemma).** If $\sum P(E_n) = \infty$ and $\{E_n\}$ are independent, then $P(E_n \text{ i.o.}) = 1$.

**Proof.** We have

$$P(E_n \text{ i.o.}) = \lim_n P\left(\bigcup_{k \geq n} E_k\right) = \lim_n \left[1 - P\left(\bigcap_{k \geq n} E_k^c\right)\right]$$

$$= \lim_n \left[1 - \prod_{k \geq n} (1 - P(E_k))\right] \geq \limsup_n \left[1 - \prod_{k \geq n} e^{-P(E_k)}\right] \quad \text{since } 1 - x \leq e^{-x}$$

$$= \limsup_n \left[1 - e^{-\sum_{k \geq n} P(E_k)}\right] = 1.$$ 

Counterexamples without independence.

3" ... Draw the tangent line to illustrate the inequality. ...
§1.2. Random Variables.

A (real-valued) random variable is a function $X: \Omega \to \mathbb{R}$. Its (cumulative) distribution function (c.d.f.) $F = F_X$ is $F(x) := P[X \leq x]$. The c.d.f. determines the distribution of $X$. Often the tail probability function $F'(x) := 1 - F(x) = P[X > x]$ is useful. We use the notation $X \sim F$, especially when $F$ has a name, like Bin$(n,p)$ or Unif$[0,1]$. When two random variables $X$ and $Y$ have the same c.d.f., we write $X \overset{d}{=} Y$.

In case we have a collection of identically distributed random variables $X_i$, we often write $X$ for a random variable with the same distribution as all of the $X_i$.

If the range of $X$ is countable, we call $X$ discrete; if its values are isolated, then $F_X$ is a step function. If no value has positive probability, $X$ is continuous; this is the same as saying that $F_X$ is a continuous function. The random variable $X$ could be neither discrete nor continuous. For example, if we flip a coin and get H, then set $X := 0$; but if we get T, then choose $X \sim \text{Unif}[0,1]$. What is $F_X$?

If $\exists f: \mathbb{R} \to \mathbb{R}$ such that $\forall x \ F(x) = \int_{-\infty}^{x} f(s) \, ds$, then $X$ is absolutely continuous [called “continuous” in the book] and $f$ is its probability density function. In this case, $f(x) = F'(x)$ and $P[X \in B] = \int_B f(x) \, dx$. Almost always, we will use the case that $B$ is an interval. Defn for more general $B$. ...

For two random variables $X$ and $Y$, their joint distribution function is $F_{X,Y}(x,y) := P[X \leq x, Y \leq y]$. If $F_{X,Y}(x,y) = \int_{-\infty}^{x} \int_{-\infty}^{y} f_{X,Y}(s,t) \, dt \, ds$, then $f_{X,Y}$ is called the joint density of $X$ and $Y$.

Note that $F_X(x) = F_{X,Y}(x,\infty)$. Explain limits not along sequences. ...

We have that $X$ and $Y$ are independent $\iff \forall x,y \ F_{X,Y}(x,y) = F_X(x)F_Y(y) \iff \forall A,B \ P[X \in A, Y \in B] = P[X \in A]P[Y \in B]$. 
§1.3. Expected Value.

The expectation of $X$ is defined by $E(X) := \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} x \, dF_X(x)$. However, we will only say what this means in two cases: If $X$ is absolutely continuous, then $E(X) = \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} x \, f_X(x) \, dx$. If $X$ is discrete, then $E(X) = \sum_x x \, P[X = x]$. Give idea of Stieltjes integral with $\int h(x) \, dF_X(x)$ to explain notation. ... It can be shown that

$$E[h(X)] = \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} h(x) \, dF_X(x)$$

so that, in particular,

$$P[X \in A] = \int_A dF_X(x).$$

It can also be shown that $E(\sum_{i=1}^n X_i) = \sum_{i=1}^n E(X_i)$. This linearity is actually a key property of expectation; the proper definition of expectation using measure theory makes the proof of linearity easy. Since $E[Z] \geq 0$ when $Z \geq 0$, it follows that $E[Y] \geq E[X]$ when $Y \geq X$. Another particular case of the previous formula for $E(h(X))$ uses $h(x) := \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} g(x,y) \, dy$, which gives

$$E\left[\int_{-\infty}^{\infty} g(X,y) \, dy\right] = \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} g(x,y) \, dy \, dF_X(x) = \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} g(x,y) \, dF_X(x) \, dy$$

$$= \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} E[g(X,y)] \, dy.$$

In other words, we can interchange expectation and integral. Define the variance of $X$ as

$$\text{Var}(X) := E\left[ (X - E(X))^2 \right] = E(X^2) - E(X)^2$$

and the covariance of $X$ and $Y$ as

$$\text{Cov}(X,Y) := E\left[ (X - E(X))(Y - E(Y)) \right] = E(XY) - E(X)E(Y).$$

0° ... Recall that $\text{Cov}(X,Y) = 0$ if (but not only if) $X$ and $Y$ are independent. We have

$$\text{Var}\left(\sum_{i=1}^n X_i\right) = \sum_{i=1}^n \text{Var}(X_i) + \sum_{i \neq j} \text{Cov}(X_i, X_j).$$

0° ... In particular, if $X_i$ are independent, then $\text{Var}\left(\sum_{i=1}^n X_i\right) = \sum_{i=1}^n \text{Var}(X_i)$.

If $X$ and $Y$ have a joint density, then it can be shown that

$$E[h(X,Y)] = \int \int h(x,y) f_{X,Y}(x,y) \, dx \, dy.$$
§1.4. Moment Generating, Characteristic Functions, and Laplace Transforms.

We will occasionally need the moment generating function

\[ E[e^{tX}] = \sum_{n \geq 0} \frac{E[X^n]}{n!} t^n. \]

(Although we will not pay close attention to when this equality holds, it does in all situations we will encounter. For example, if the left-hand side is finite for some \( t_+ \geq 0 \) and some \( t_- \leq 0 \), then equality holds for all \( t \in [t_-, t_+]. \))

The reason for the name is that

\[ E[X^n] = \left( \frac{d}{dt} \right)^n E[e^{tX}] \bigg|_{t=0}. \]

1" ... We can differentiate inside the expectation.

Example: \( \text{Exp}(\lambda) \). Recall that \( X \sim \text{Exp}(\lambda) \) (\( \lambda \) is called the parameter or rate) if it has probability density function

\[ f_X(x) = \begin{cases} 
\lambda e^{-\lambda x} & \text{if } x \geq 0, \\
0 & \text{if } x < 0.
\end{cases} \]

3" ... Thus, for \( X \sim \text{Exp}(\lambda) \), we have \( E[X] = 1/\lambda \) and \( \text{Var}(X) = 1/\lambda^2 \). ...

In the case of the exponential distribution, one could also derive the moments from the fact that \( \int_0^\infty x^n e^{-x} dx = n! \) (which follows by induction and integration by parts). Conversely, one can derive the value of this integral by differentiating the moment generating function for \( \text{Exp}(1) \).
§1.5. Conditional Expectation.

Use an example for all the following, such as \( X \) the number of the first die and \( Y \) the sum of two dice. Suppose that \( X \) and \( Y \) are discrete. Then

\[
P[X = x \mid Y = y] = \frac{P[X = x,Y = y]}{P[Y = y]}.
\]

We can regard this as a function of \( x \) or of \( y \). As a function of \( x \), it gives the distribution function of a random variable since \( \sum_x P[X = x \mid Y = y] = 1 \). It is called the conditional distribution of \( X \) given \( Y = y \). It has, thus, an expectation,

\[
\sum_x x P[X = x \mid Y = y] =: E[X \mid Y = y].
\]

2" \ldots

If we regard \( P[X = x \mid Y = y] \) as a function of \( y \), then we may pre-compose it with \( Y \) to get a random variable denoted \( P[X = x \mid Y] \). \ldots We can also pre-compose the function \( y \mapsto E[X \mid Y = y] \) with \( Y \) to get a random variable denoted \( E[X \mid Y] \). \ldots We have

\[
(1.5.1) \quad E[X] = E[E[X \mid Y]].
\]

2" Proof: Write it out. \ldots

As a special case, we get that

\[
P[X = x] = E[P[X = x \mid Y]].
\]

1" \ldots

These ideas extend to all random variables. For the case that \( X \) and \( Y \) are jointly absolutely continuous, the density of \( X \) given \( Y = y \) is \( x \mapsto f_{X,Y}(x,y)/f_Y(y) \) (by Exercise 3, this is a probability density function). Think of this as follows. Note that

\[
f_X(x) \, dx = P[X \in (x,x + dx)]
\]

so that

\[
f_{X,Y}(x,y) \over f_Y(y) = \frac{P[X \in (x,x + dx),Y \in (y,y + dy)]/(dx \, dy)}{P[Y \in (y,y + dy)]/dy} = P[X \in (x,x + dx) \mid Y \in (y,y + dy)]/dx = P[X \in (x,x + dx) \mid Y = y]/dx.
\]
This probability density has an expectation, which we write as \( E[X \mid Y = y] \). When we pre-compose this function of \( y \) with \( Y \), we get the random variable \( E[X \mid Y] \). Equation (1.5.1) holds too:

\[
E\left[ E[X \mid Y] \right] = \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} E[X \mid Y = y] dF_Y(y) = \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} E[X \mid Y = y] f_Y(y) \, dy
\]

\[
= \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} x \frac{f_{X,Y}(x,y)}{f_Y(y)} \, dx \, f_Y(y) \, dy
\]

\[
= \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} f_{X,Y}(x,y) \, dy \, dx = \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} x f_X(x) \, dx \quad \text{[by Exercise 3]}
\]

\[
= E(X).
\]

We also want to define \( E[X \mid Y] \) when only one of \( X \) or \( Y \) is absolutely continuous. First, if \( X \) is any random variable and \( A \) is an event of positive probability, then the function

\[
x \mapsto P[X \leq x \mid A]
\]

is the c.d.f. of a random variable, because it is non-decreasing, tends to 0 as \( x \to -\infty \) and to 1 as \( x \to \infty \), and is continuous from the right; its expectation is denoted \( E[X \mid A] \). This allows us to define \( P[X \leq x \mid Y = y] \) and \( E[X \mid Y = y] \) when \( Y \) is discrete. (It can be shown using measure theory that if \( X \) above is absolutely continuous, then so is the random variable with the above c.d.f.) Second, if \( A \) is an event and \( Y \) is an absolutely continuous random variable, we define

\[
P[A \mid Y = y] := \lim_{\epsilon \to 0} \frac{P(A \cap \{Y \in (y-\epsilon, y+\epsilon)\})}{P[Y \in (y-\epsilon, y+\epsilon)]}
\]

when the limit exists. When \( X \) is discrete and \( Y \) is absolutely continuous, this allows us to define

\[
E[X \mid Y = y] := \sum_x x P[X = x \mid Y = y].
\]

Once we have defined \( E[X \mid Y = y] \) in either of these cases, we define \( E[X \mid Y] \) as before by pre-composing with \( Y \).

In all cases, it can be shown that (1.5.1) still holds. In particular,

\[
P(A) = E[1_A] = E[E[1_A \mid Y]] = E[P(A \mid Y)].
\]
\[ E[h(Y)E[X \mid Y]] = E[E[h(Y)X \mid Y]] = E[h(Y)X]. \]

Also, it follows from (1.5.1) that
\[ E[E[X \mid Y_1, Y_2, \ldots]] = E[X]. \]

Two random variables \( X \) and \( Y \) are independent iff the conditional distribution of \( X \) given \( Y = y \) is equal to the unconditional distribution of \( X \) (for all \( y \)).

We now give some applications of conditioning.

**Example PM 3.15 (Analyzing the Quick-Sort Algorithm).** Given distinct numbers \( x_1, \ldots, x_n \), the goal is to place them in increasing order, that is, to *sort* them, as quickly as possible. The quick-sort algorithm works as illustrated in an example: Suppose that the original list is 10, 5, 8, 2, 1, 4, 7. Choose one at random, say, 4. Compare 4 to the others: \{2, 1\}, 4, \{10, 5, 8, 7\}. Now apply the same procedure to the set \(< 4\) and the set \(> 4\):

\[
\begin{align*}
\rightarrow 1, 2, 4, & \{10, 5, 8, 7\} \rightarrow \text{choose at random from 2nd set, say 7:} \\
\rightarrow 1, 2, 4, 5, 7, & \{10, 8\} \rightarrow 1, 2, 4, 5, 7, 8, 10.
\end{align*}
\]

The number of comparisons here was 6 + 1 + 3 + 1 = 11. This is a random “divide and conquer” algorithm. How well does it do? The slowest would be if we always pick the smallest or the largest one; then every pair must be compared and it takes \(\sim n^2/2\) comparisons. The fastest possible would be if every time, the median were chosen; then the number of comparisons would be

\[
\sim n + \frac{n}{2} \times 2 + \frac{n}{4} \times 4 + \cdots \quad (\sim \log_2 n \text{ terms}) \sim n \log_2 n.
\]

It turns out that this is quite close to \(M_n\), the expected number of comparisons in quick-sort.

To calculate \(M_n\), condition on the rank of the initial value selected:

\[
M_n = \sum_{j=1}^{n} E[\text{number of comparisons} \mid \text{initial value is } j\text{th smallest}]P[\text{initial value is } j\text{th smallest}]
\]

\[
= \sum_{j=1}^{n} (n - 1 + M_{j-1} + M_{n-j}) \cdot \frac{1}{n} = n - 1 + \frac{2}{n} \sum_{k=1}^{n-1} M_k.
\]
Thus

\[ nM_n = n(n - 1) + 2 \sum_{k=1}^{n-1} M_k. \]

Substitute \( n - 1 \) for \( n \) and subtract:

\[ nM_n - (n - 1)M_{n-1} = 2(n - 1) + 2M_{n-1}, \]

whence

\[ nM_n = (n + 1)M_{n-1} + 2(n - 1), \]

which is

\[ \frac{M_n}{n+1} = \frac{M_{n-1}}{n} + \frac{2(n-1)}{n(n+1)}. \]

Iterating gives

\[ \frac{M_n}{n+1} = 2 \sum_{n \geq k \geq 1} \frac{k-1}{k(k+1)} = 2 \sum_{k=1}^{n} \left[ \frac{2}{k+1} - \frac{1}{k} \right] \]

\[ \sim 2(2\log n - \log n) = 2\log n, \]

whence

\[ M_n \sim 2n\log n. \]

Note that \( 2 > (\log 2)^{-1}. \)

**Example 1.5(e) (The Ballot Theorem).** In an election, A receives \( n \) votes and B receives \( m \) votes, \( n > m \). If all orderings of the \( n + m \) votes are equally likely, then

\[ P[A \text{ always (strictly) ahead of } B] = \frac{n-m}{n+m}. \]

**Proof.** Let \( P_{n,m} \) be the desired probability. Then

\[ P_{n,m} = P[A \text{ always ahead } | \text{ A gets last vote}]P[A \text{ gets last vote}] + P[A \text{ always ahead } | \text{ B gets last vote}]P[B \text{ gets last vote}] \]

\[ = P_{n-1,m} \cdot \frac{n}{n+m} + P_{n,m-1} \cdot \frac{m}{n+m}. \]

Here, we make the convention that \( P_{n-1,m} := 0 \) if \( n = m + 1 \); note that this fits our formula nicely, so we needn’t consider that case separately when we claim that our formula fits the equation. Note why we conditioned on the last vote, rather than the first. Now use induction on \( n + m. \)
This also holds assuming only the all cyclic orderings of the votes are equally likely. In other words, given a cyclic order, the number of linear orders is $n + m$, of which $n - m$ have A ahead always.

**Example 1.5(a) (The Sum of a Random Number of Random Variables).** Let $X_i$ be i.i.d. ($i \geq 1$) and $N$ be an independent random variable with values in $\mathbb{N} := \{0, 1, 2, \ldots\}$. Let $Y := \sum_{i=1}^{N} X_i$.

**Examples:**

- **Queueing:** $N :=$ the number of customers arriving in a specific time period, $X_i :=$ the service time required by the $i$th customer. Then $\sum_{i=1}^{N} X_i = $ the total service time required by customers arriving in that time period.

- **Risk Theory:** $N :=$ the number of claims arriving at an insurance company in a given week, $X_i :=$ the amount of the $i$th claim. Then $\sum_{i=1}^{N} X_i = $ the total liability for that week.

- **Population Model:** $N :=$ the number of plants of a given species in a certain area, $X_i :=$ the number of seeds produced by the $i$th plant.

To compute moments of $Y$, we compute the moment generating function:

$$E[e^{tY}] = E[E[e^{tY} \mid N]].$$

Now

$$E[e^{tY} \mid N = n] = E[e^{t\sum_{i=1}^{N} X_i} \mid N = n] = E[e^{t\sum_{i=1}^{n} X_i} \mid N = n]$$

$$= E[e^{t\sum_{i=1}^{n} X_i}]$$

by independence

$$= E[e^{tX}]^n$$

by independence,

where $X \overset{d}{=} X_i$. Therefore $E[e^{tY}] = E[E[e^{tX}]^N],$

$$d dt E[e^{tY}] = E[Ye^{tY}] = E[N E[e^{tX}]^{N-1} E[Xe^{tX}]],$$

$$d^2 dt^2 E[e^{tY}] = E[Y^2 e^{tY}]$$

$$= E[N(N - 1)E[e^{tX}]^{N-2} E[Xe^{tX}]^2] + E[NE[e^{tX}]^{N-1} E[X^2 e^{tX}]],$$

so

\[ E[Y] = E[NE[X]] = E[N]E[X], \]
\[ E[Y^2] = E[N(N-1)]E[X]^2 + E[N]E[X^2], \]

and

\[ \text{Var}(Y) = E[N]E[X^2] + \left\{ E[N^2] - E[N] - E[N]^2 \right\}E[X]^2 \]
\[ = E[N] \text{Var}(X) + \text{Var}(N)E[X]^2. \]
§1.6. The Exponential Distribution, Lack of Memory, and Hazard Rate Functions.

If $X \sim \text{Exp}(\lambda)$, then $F_X(x) = e^{-\lambda x}$. Such a random variable is **memoryless**: 

$$P(X > s + t \mid X > t) = P(X > s) \quad \text{for all } s, t \geq 0. \quad \text{(N1)}$$

1"

Example: A post office has 2 clerks. The customer service time of each clerk is $\text{Exp}(\lambda)$. Neither clerk is busy. One customer arrives at a random time and, while that customer is still being served, another customer arrives at a random time and begins service with the other clerk. What is the chance that the first customer finishes first?

Solution. The answer is $1/2$ by the (strong) memoryless property and symmetry. Note that we assume the arrival times and service times are mutually independent.

The **strong memoryless property** says that if $X \sim \text{Exp}(\lambda)$ and $Y \geq 0$ is independent of $X$, then for all $s \geq 0$, we have $P[X > s + Y \mid X > Y] = P[X > s]$. The book does not mention that the strong memoryless property needs to be established. We prove this by writing the conditional probability as a quotient; calculate both numerator and denominator by conditioning on $Y$. E.g.,

$$P[X > s + Y \mid X > Y] = E[P[X > s + Y \mid Y]] \quad \text{and} \quad P[X > s + Y \mid Y = y] = P[X > s + y \mid Y = y] = e^{-\lambda(s+y)}$$

by independence, whence $P[X > s + Y] = E[e^{-\lambda(s+Y)}]$. Likewise, $P[X > Y] = E[e^{-\lambda Y}]$. Thus, the quotient is $e^{-\lambda s}$.

For this problem, let $A_1$ and $A_2$ be the arrival times and $S_1, S_2$ be the service times. We want to show symmetry, i.e., that for all $t > 0$, we have

$$P[A_1 + S_1 > A_2 + t \mid A_1 < A_2 < A_1 + S_1] = P[S_2 > t \mid A_1 < A_2 < A_1 + S_1] = e^{-\lambda t}$$

and that $A_1 + S_1 - A_2$ is independent of $S_2$ given $A_1 < A_2 < A_1 + S_1$, which follows from the assumed mutual independence. . . . We have

$$P[A_1 + S_1 > A_2 + t \mid A_1 < A_2 < A_1 + S_1] = P[S_1 > A_2 - A_1 + t \mid 0 < A_2 - A_1 < S_1]$$

$$= e^{-\lambda t}$$

by the strong memoryless property, where we use the random variables $S_1$ and $A_2 - A_1$ with respect to the probability measure where $A_2 - A_1$ is conditioned to be positive. . . .

Alternatively, we can formulate an even stronger memoryless property: if $X \sim \text{Exp}(\lambda)$ and $Y, Z \geq 0$ with $X, Y$ and $Z$ being mutually independent, then $P[X > Z + Y \mid X > Y] = P[X > Z]$. We prove this by re-using some of what we proved above, namely,
\[ P[X > Y] = E[e^{-\lambda Y}], \quad P[X > Z] = E[e^{-\lambda Z}] \text{ and } P[X > Z + Y, X > Y] = P[X > Z + Y] = E[e^{-\lambda(Z+Y)}] = E[e^{-\lambda Z}] E[e^{-\lambda Y}]. \ldots \]

We can use this stronger memoryless property to give another solution:

\[
P[A_1 + S_1 > A_2 + S_2 \mid A_1 < A_2 < A_1 + S_1] = P[S_1 > S_2 + (A_2 - A_1) \mid 0 < A_2 - A_1 < S_1] = P[S_1 > S_2] = 1/2.
\]

**Example 1.6(a).** A post office has 2 clerks. The customer service time of each clerk is \(\text{Exp}(\lambda)\). You enter and are first in line, with both clerks already serving customers. What is the chance that both customers currently being served will be finished before you are?

\[
\text{Solution. Answer: } 1/2 \text{ by the strong memoryless property and symmetry, measuring time from when the first customer leaves. By the previous example, we may assume that both previous customers began service when you entered. Let their service times be } S_1 \text{ and } S_2, \text{ while yours is } X. \text{ We want } P[X + \min\{S_1, S_2\} > \max\{S_1, S_2\}] \text{. Calculate this by conditioning whether } S_1 < S_2 \text{ or not and apply the strong memoryless property measuring time from } \min\{S_1, S_2\}. \text{ Again, establish symmetry.}
\]

**Example:** Consider two teams of gladiators. At each round, each team sends one of its gladiators to battle. Each gladiator has a fixed strength, and when two fight, the probability of winning is proportional to the strength. The loser never plays again. Show that the order in which teams send gladiators to battle does not change the probability of having a surviving gladiator.

\[
\text{Solution. Replace each gladiator by a light bulb with exponential lifetime whose mean equals the strength of that gladiator.}
\]

Note that (N1) is the same as \(F_X(s + t) = F_X(s)F_X(t)\). Thus, \(\log F_X\) satisfies the functional equation

\[ g(x + y) = g(x) + g(y) \quad (x, y \geq 0). \]

\[ 1^n \quad \text{Also, } \log F_X \text{ is right continuous (i.e., continuous from the right).} \ldots \text{ To show that the exponential random variables are the only memoryless random variables, we show that this equation has only the linear solutions } g(x) = cx \text{ provided } g \text{ is right continuous. (This result will be useful later, too.) Here are the steps:}
\]

\[ 2^n \quad (1) \text{ Let } c := g(1). \text{ Then } g(x) = cx \text{ for } x \in \mathbb{Q}^+. \ldots \]

(2) If \( g \in C_r(\mathbb{R}^+) \), we’re done. (Here, \( C_r \) is the space of right-continuous functions, i.e., functions that are continuous from the right.)

(3) If \( g \) is assumed only to be right continuous at 0, then actually \( g \in C_r(\mathbb{R}^+) \) since
\[
g(x_0 + h) - g(x_0) = g(h).
\]
For later use, we note that if \( g \) is bounded in some interval \([0, \delta]\) (\( \delta > 0 \), say, by \( M \), then \( |g(x)| = |g(nx)|/n \leq M/n \) for \( 0 \leq x \leq \delta/n \), whence \( g \) is right continuous at 0.

Exponential as a limit of geometric, which is the discrete memoryless random variable:
\[
n^{-1} \operatorname{Geom}(\lambda/n) \Rightarrow \operatorname{Exp}(\lambda).
\]

In general, if \( X \) has a probability density function, the failure or hazard rate function \( \lambda_X(t) \) is \( \lambda_X(t) := f_X(t)/F_X(t) \). Thus \( P[X \in (t, t+dt) \mid X > t] \approx \lambda_X(t) dt \), which explains the name.

§1.8. Some Limit Theorems.

WLLN. If \( X_i \) are i.i.d. with mean \( \mu \in (-\infty, \infty) \), then for all \( \epsilon > 0 \), we have
\[
\lim_{n \to \infty} P\left( \frac{1}{n} \sum_{i=1}^{n} X_i \in (\mu - \epsilon, \mu + \epsilon) \right) = 1.
\]

SLLN. If \( X_i \) are i.i.d. with mean \( \mu \in [-\infty, \infty] \), then
\[
P\left( \lim_{n \to \infty} \frac{1}{n} \sum_{i=1}^{n} X_i = \mu \right) = 1.
\]

CLT. If \( X_i \) are i.i.d. with finite mean \( \mu \) and finite variance \( \sigma^2 \), then \( \forall a \in \mathbb{R} \)
\[
\lim_{n \to \infty} P\left( \frac{1}{\sigma \sqrt{n}} \sum_{i=1}^{n} (X_i - \mu) \leq a \right) = \int_{-\infty}^{a} \frac{1}{\sqrt{2\pi}} e^{-x^2/2} \, dx.
\]
I.e.,
\[
\frac{1}{\sigma \sqrt{n}} \sum_{i=1}^{n} (X_i - \mu) \Rightarrow \mathcal{N}(0, 1).
\]

(Let the random variables \( X_n \) have c.d.f. \( F_n \) and \( Y \) have c.d.f. \( F \). We write that \( X_n \Rightarrow Y \), \( X_n \Rightarrow F \), or \( F_n \Rightarrow F \) if \( F_n(a) \to F(a) \) at every \( a \in \mathbb{R} \) where \( F(a) \) is continuous. This is called convergence in distribution, convergence in law, or weak convergence. The last name is because this kind of convergence follows from a.s. convergence; that is, if \( P[X_n \Rightarrow Y] = 1 \), then \( X_n \Rightarrow Y \). The WLLN is about weak convergence to a constant random variable, while the SLLN is about a.s. convergence. If \( X_n \) and \( Y \) are integer valued, then \( X_n \Rightarrow Y \) if \( P[X_n = k] \to P[Y = k] \) for all \( k \in \mathbb{Z} \).)

We will use the following generalization only once:
CLT of Lindeberg. Let \( X_i \) be independent, \( F_i := \text{c.d.f. of } X_i \). Suppose that 
\[ E(X_i) = 0, \ Var(X_i) = \sigma_i^2 < \infty, \]

\[ s_n^2 := \sum_{i=1}^{n} \sigma_i^2, \]

and

\[
\forall t > 0 \quad \lim_{n \to \infty} \frac{1}{s_n^2} \sum_{i=1}^{n} \int_{|x| \geq ts_n} x^2 \ dF_i(x) = 0.
\]

Then

\[ \frac{1}{s_n} \sum_{i=1}^{n} X_i \Rightarrow N(0, 1). \]

Note that this is a generalization.

Poisson Convergence (The Law of Rare Events). For any \( \lambda > 0 \), we have

\[ \text{Bin}(n, \lambda/n) \Rightarrow \text{Pois}(\lambda) \]

as \( n \to \infty \). (See Exercise 7 (Exercise 1.3, p. 46).) More generally, suppose that \( \forall n \) \( X_{n,i} \) (\( 1 \leq i \leq n \)) are independent random variables with values in \( \mathbb{N} \) such that

\[ p_{n,i} := P[X_{n,i} = 1] \]

and

\[ \varepsilon_{n,i} := P[X_{n,i} \geq 2] \]

satisfy

\[ \sum_{i=1}^{n} p_{n,i} \to \lambda \in [0, \infty], \]

\[ \max_{1 \leq i \leq n} p_{n,i} \to 0, \]

and

\[ \sum_{i=1}^{n} \varepsilon_{n,i} \to 0. \]

Then

\[ \sum_{i=1}^{n} X_{n,i} \Rightarrow \text{Pois}(\lambda). \]
Note: There are two special interpretations: \( \text{Pois}(0) \) means the distribution of the random variable that is identically 0; and \( \text{Pois}(\infty) \) means the distribution of the random variable that is identically \( \infty \). In the latter case, to say that random variables \( X_n \) converge weakly to \( \infty \) means that for all \( t < \infty \), we have \( F_{X_n}(t) \to 0 \) as \( n \to \infty \).

**The Monotone Convergence Theorem (MCT).** If \( X_n \to X \) a.s. and \( 0 \leq X_n \leq X \) a.s., then \( E[X_n] \to E[X] \).

**The Lebesgue Dominated Convergence Theorem (LDCT).** If \( X_n \to X \) a.s., \( |X_n| \leq Y \), and \( E[Y] < \infty \), then \( E[X_n] \to E[X] \).

**The Bounded Convergence Theorem (BCT).** *The LDCT for \( Y \) a constant.*

Definition of independent increments and stationary increments for a stochastic process. We will be dealing with two stochastic processes that have independent and stationary increments: ones that jump (Poisson processes) and ones that don’t (Brownian motion). ...

We’ll finish with a fun fact:

**Example 1.9(a).** There are \( n \) beads arranged on a circular necklace. Number them 1 through \( n \). An ant starts at one of them, say, number 1, and takes a simple random walk on the beads. … For any \( k \neq 1 \), what is the chance that bead number \( k \) is visited only after all the other beads have been visited?

\[
\downarrow
\]

*Solution.* Surprisingly, it is the same for all \( k \), whence it is \( 1/(n-1) \). To see this, consider the first time that either bead \( k \pm 1 \) is reached (counting mod \( n \)). At this time, what matters is whether the other bead \( k \mp 1 \) is reached before bead \( k \). This does not depend on the sign and clearly does not depend on \( k \).

\[
\uparrow
\]

Read pp. 35--36, 37--39, and 41--42 in the book.
Chapter 2

The Poisson Process

Poisson processes are examples of point processes, which are models for random distribution of “particles” (called “points”) in space. E.g., this might include defects on a surface, raisins in cookies or cereal, misprints in books, stars in space, arrival times of phone calls at an exchange, etc. The theory of Poisson processes when space is 1-dimensional, or more precisely, $\mathbb{R}^+$, is especially important for its connections to many other stochastic processes. In this case, “space” is usually called “time” and the “points” are usually called “events”.

Informally, we call $\langle N(t) \rangle_{t \geq 0}$ a counting process if $N(t)$ is the (finite) number of “events” occurring in $(0, t]$. Thus, $N(t) - N(s) =$ the number of events in $(s, t]$. Formally, the definition of a counting process is that

- $N(t) \in \mathbb{N}$,
- $s < t \Rightarrow N(s) \leq N(t)$, and
- $N(\cdot)$ is right continuous (with probability 1).

A counting process is called simple if it never jumps by more than 1. Thus, if $N(\cdot)$ is a simple counting process, then $N(t) - N(s)$ is equal to the number of jumps that occur in $(s, t]$; we usually refer to the location of a jump as an event.

**Theorem.** Suppose that $N(\cdot)$ is a simple counting process with independent, stationary increments. Suppose that $P[N(0) = 0] = 1$ and $P[\forall t \ N(t) = 0] = 0$. Then $\exists \lambda \in (0, \infty)$ such that $\forall t \ N(t) \sim \text{Pois} (\lambda t)$.

**Definition.** A process satisfying these hypotheses is called a Poisson process with rate $\lambda$.

**Demo and figure.** Note normal limit.

**Proof.** In order to apply the Poisson convergence theorem, fix $t$ and let $X_{n,i}$ be the indicator that there is an event in $[(i - 1)t/n, it/n]$ for $1 \leq i \leq n$. Because $N(\cdot)$ is simple and $N(0) = 0$, it follows that $Y_n := \sum_{i} X_{n,i} \to N(t)$ as $n \to \infty$ a.s. $\therefore Y_n \Rightarrow N(t)$ as $n \to \infty$. By Exercise 7, it follows that $N(t)$ is a Poisson random variable. Let $m(t)$
1” denote its mean. Then \( m(t) < \infty \) and \( m(s + t) = m(s) + m(t) \). . . Since \( m \) is monotonic, we get \( m(t) = \lambda t \) for some \( \lambda \in [0, \infty) \). . . It follows that \( \lambda > 0 \) . . .

We now show that such a process exists. Let \( X_n \) be i.i.d. \( \text{Exp}(\lambda) \). Set

\[
N(t) := \sup\{n : \sum_{k=1}^{n} X_k \leq t\}.
\]
Since $\sum_1^n X_k/n \to 1/\lambda$ a.s., we have $N < \infty$ a.s. Clearly $N$ jumps by 1 and, by the memoryless property, has independent, stationary increments. . . . Finally,

$$P[N(t) = 0] = P[X_1 > t] = e^{-\lambda t},$$

whence $\lambda$ is the rate of the Poisson process $N$. This proves existence of the process. The sequence $(X_n; n \geq 1)$ is called the sequence of **interarrival times**.

Give the intuition in terms of coins and the limits of geometric/binomial random variables.

Bernoulli approximation to Poisson process.

Let $(N(t); t \geq 0)$ be a stochastic process with independent, stationary increments that is right continuous and all of whose discontinuities are jump discontinuities. Assume $N(0) \equiv 0$. The following properties can be shown:

- For all $s \geq 0$, if an event $A$ is defined in terms of $N(t)$ for $t \leq s$ and another event $B$ is defined in terms of the increments $N(t) - N(s)$ for $t > s$, then $A$ and $B$ are independent.
- The Markov property holds: for all $s \geq 0$, if an event $B$ is defined in terms of $N(t)$ for $t > s$, then $P(B \mid N(t), t \leq s) = P(B \mid N(s))$.
- The strong Markov property holds: Suppose $\tau$ is a random variable with values in $[0, \infty)$ such that for all $s$, the event that $\tau \leq s$ depends only on $N(t)$ for $t \leq s$. Then if an event $A$ is defined in terms of $N(t)$ for $t \leq \tau$ and another event $B$ is defined in terms

* Such stochastic processes that are also nonnegative are called **subordinators**. The condition of no jump discontinuities is the same as the existence of left limits everywhere once we assume right-continuity. Another name for right-continuous functions with left limits is **cadlag**, which is an abbreviation for the French phrase, “continue à droite, limites à gauche”.

of \(N(\tau + t) - N(\tau)\) for \(t \geq 0\), then \(A\) and \(B\) are independent. Furthermore, the law of 
\[\langle N(\tau + t) - N(\tau); t \geq 0 \rangle\]
is the same as the law of \(\langle N(t); t \geq 0 \rangle\).

Now it is easily calculated (see p. 64) that the first arrival time of a Poisson process with rate \(\lambda\) has an \(\text{Exp}(\lambda)\) distribution. ... By the strong Markov property, all the interarrival times have an \(\text{Exp}(\lambda)\) distribution and, in fact, the Poisson process is of the type constructed. ...

1″

Thus, \(\lambda\) uniquely determines the law of the Poisson process. Here, “law” (or “distribution”) is the analogue for processes of “c.d.f.” for a real-valued random variable. There are, in fact, two interpretations of “law” for processes. The simpler one is the collection of joint distributions of \(\langle N(t_i) \rangle\) for all finite \(\{t_i\} \subset \mathbb{R}\). To be more explicit, these are called the \textbf{finite-dimensional marginals} of the process \(N\). This is often sufficient; but note that \(N\) and \(N'\) may have the same finite-dimensional marginals, yet \(N\) may be right continuous and \(N'\) not be. Example: Poisson process made left-continuous.

Thus, sometimes one introduces a space of functions that each \(N(\cdot)\) belongs to. For example, for counting processes, \(N\), we have that a.s., \(N \in C_r([0, \infty))\). Then the \textbf{law} of \(N\) is the collection of probabilities \(P[N \in A]\), where \(A \subseteq C_r([0, \infty))\).* In fact, in this case, the finite-dimensional marginals determine the law in this case, even if we use only rational

* Technically, one needs to introduce a \(\sigma\)-field on \(C_r([0, \infty))\) and then \(A \mapsto P[N \in A]\) is a probability measure on this \(\sigma\)-field.
times, because the values at rational times combined with right-continuity determine the function values at all positive times.

In any case, when we say that two processes have the same law, it means that all relevant probabilities are the same for the two processes: They are indistinguishable probabilistically. (Of course, this does not mean they are the same process, just as we do not say that two fair coins are the same coin.)

An equivalent definition of Poisson process is given in the book:

**Theorem.** Suppose that $N(\cdot)$ is a counting process with independent, stationary increments. If $\exists \lambda \in (0, \infty)$ such that $\forall t \ N(t) \sim \text{Pois}(\lambda t)$, then $N(\cdot)$ is a Poisson process with rate $\lambda$.

**Proof.** The only thing to show is that $N(\cdot)$ never jumps by more than 1. It suffices to show that for each $k \geq 1$, $N(\cdot)$ does not jump by more than 1 in $[0, k]$. Fix $k$ and let $A$ be the event that there is a jump by more than 1 in $[0, k]$. Let $A_{n,i}$ be the event that $N((ik/n) - N((i-1)k/n) \geq 2$. Then $A \cup \bigcup_{i=1}^{n} A_{n,i}$ for each $n$. Because $N((ik/n) - N((i-1)k/n) \sim \text{Pois}(\lambda k/n)$, it follows that $P(A_{n,i}) = 1 - e^{-\lambda k/n} - \lambda(k/n)e^{-\lambda k/n} = o(\lambda k/n)$ as $n \to \infty$. ... Hence $P(A) \leq \sum_{i=1}^{n} P(A_{n,i}) \leq n \cdot o(\lambda k/n) = o(1)$, i.e., $P(A) = 0$.

**Example PM 5.3.6 (Estimating Software Reliability).** New software is tested for time $t$. After the whole run is complete, the bugs discovered are fixed. What error rate remains? Suppose the bugs cause errors like a Poisson process with rate $\lambda_i$ ($i \geq 1$). Suppose also that they are independent. If $\psi_i(t)$ is the indicator that bug $i$ has not caused an error by time $t$, then we want to estimate

$$\Lambda(t) := \sum_i \lambda_i \psi_i(t).$$

(By Exercise 16, the remaining bugs cause errors together at the times of a Poisson process with rate $\Lambda(t)$.)
Naturally, the bugs with small $\lambda_i$ are those remaining. Let $M_j(t) := $ the number of bugs that caused exactly $j$ errors up to time $t$. If $X_i(t)$ is the indicator that bug $i$ has caused exactly one error by time $t$, then

$$E[\Lambda(t)] = \sum \lambda_i e^{-\lambda_i t},$$

$$E[M_1(t)] = E\left[\sum X_i\right] = \sum \lambda_i t e^{-\lambda_i t},$$

whence

$$E \left[ \Lambda(t) - \frac{M_1(t)}{t} \right] = 0.$$

Thus, $M_1(t)/t$ may be a good estimate of $\Lambda(t)$. In this way, we estimate the unknown (unobserved) by the known (observed). This magic is made possible by probability and is the foundation of statistics. Like the game of choosing the higher of 2 numbers when we are allowed to see only one. To see how good this estimate is, compute

$$\text{Var} \left( \Lambda(t) - \frac{M_1(t)}{t} \right) = \frac{E[M_1(t) + 2M_2(t)]}{t^2}$$

(after lengthy calculations, shown below). Thus, we may estimate the error by

$$\sqrt{M_1(t) + 2M_2(t)/t}.$$

(Clearly, we should test until $M_1(t)$ and $M_2(t)$ are small compared to $t^2$.)

For example, suppose that at $t = 100$, we discover 20 bugs, of which 2 cause 1 error and 3 cause 2 errors. Then $\Lambda(100) \approx \frac{2}{100} \pm \frac{\sqrt{8}}{100}$.

Here are the calculations: Recall that the variance of a $\text{Bin}(1, p)$-random variable is $p(1 - p)$. Since $\psi_i(t) \sim \text{Bin}(1, e^{-\lambda_i t})$ and $X_i(t) \sim \text{Bin}(1, \lambda_i t e^{-\lambda_i t})$, we have

$$\text{Var} \left( \Lambda(t) - \frac{M_1(t)}{t} \right) = \text{Var} \left( \sum_i (\lambda_i \psi_i(t) - X_i(t)/t) \right)$$

$$= \sum_i \text{Var} \left( \lambda_i \psi_i(t) - X_i(t)/t \right)$$

$$= \sum_i \left[ \lambda_i^2 \text{Var}(\psi_i(t)) + \frac{1}{t^2} \text{Var}(X_i(t)) - 2 \frac{\lambda_i}{t} \text{Cov}(\psi_i(t), X_i(t)) \right]$$

$$= \sum_i \left[ \lambda_i^2 e^{-\lambda_i t} (1 - e^{-\lambda_i t}) + \frac{1}{t^2} \lambda_i t e^{-\lambda_i t} (1 - \lambda_i t e^{-\lambda_i t}) + 2 \frac{\lambda_i}{t} e^{-\lambda_i t} \lambda_i t e^{-\lambda_i t} \right]$$

$$= \sum_i \left( \lambda_i^2 e^{-\lambda_i t} + \frac{1}{t} \lambda_i e^{-\lambda_i t} \right)$$

$$= \sum_i \lambda_i^2 e^{-\lambda_i t} + \frac{E(M_1(t))}{t^2}.$$
On the other hand, if \( Y_i(t) \) denotes the indicator that bug \( i \) has caused exactly 2 errors by time \( t \), then
\[
E(M_2(t)) = \sum_i E(Y_i(t)) = \sum_i \frac{(\lambda_i t)^2}{2!} e^{-\lambda_i t},
\]
whence we obtain the desired formula.

Suppose that each event of a Poisson process with rate \( \lambda \) is classified independently as type \( i \) \((1 \leq i \leq K)\) with probability \( p_i \), where \( \sum_{i=1}^K p_i = 1 \). We also assume that the types are independent of the times of the events. Let \( N_i(t) \) be the number of type-\( i \) events by time \( t \). Here’s an amazing fact:

**Theorem.** For each \( i \), \( N_i(\cdot) \) is a Poisson process with rate \( \lambda p_i \) and these processes are mutually independent.

**Demo**

Proof. Let \( \tilde{N}_i(\cdot) \) be independent Poisson processes with rates \( \lambda p_i \). Set \( \tilde{N}(t) := \sum \tilde{N}_i(t) \). By Exercise 16 (p. 89, 2.5, extended), \( \tilde{N}(\cdot) \) is a Poisson process with rate \( \lambda \). Call the events of \( \tilde{N}(\cdot) \) type \( i \) if they come from \( \tilde{N}_i(\cdot) \). Also by Exercise 16, the first event of \( \tilde{N}(\cdot) \) is of type \( i \) with probability \( p_i \), independently of the time of the first event. By the strong Markov property applied to all \( \tilde{N}_i(\cdot) \), the same holds for the second event of \( \tilde{N}(\cdot) \), independently of the first, etc. ... Thus, \( \langle \tilde{N}_i(\cdot); 1 \leq i \leq k \rangle \) comes from \( \tilde{N}(\cdot) \) by the classification procedure that gives \( \langle N_i(\cdot) \rangle \) from \( N(\cdot) \). Therefore \( \langle \tilde{N}_i(\cdot) \rangle \overset{\text{D}}{=} \langle N_i(\cdot) \rangle \), from which the theorem follows.

Give the intuition in terms of coins and limits.

Combining two Bernoulli processes.
This proof is short, but subtle. (The proof of Exercise 16 is also short when done the best way.) A calculational proof of the above theorem, if one wants one, proceeds along the following lines: Look at the interarrival times of $N_i(\cdot)$. The combination of the memoryless property of the geometric distribution and of the exponential distribution shows that the interarrival times are i.i.d. with distribution equal to that of the sum of $\text{Geom}(p_i)$ independent $\text{Exp}(\lambda)$ random variables. What is this distribution? We claim that it is $\text{Exp}(\lambda p_i)$. [Note that this follows immediately from the theorem, but we are trying to give a direct proof.] One method to prove this is calculational; e.g., calculate the moment generating function and use the result that the m.g.f. determines the distribution uniquely. A simpler way is to verify the memoryless property and calculate the mean.

... (And intuitively, if we think of an exponential random variable as a scaling limit of geometric random variables, it follows from the fact that a geometric sum of geometrics is geometric.) In any case, once we have this done, it follows that for each $i$, the process $N_i(\cdot)$ is a $\text{Poisson}(\lambda p_i)$ process. To show that the processes are mutually independent requires verifying a statement that is already complicated to state, still more to prove. Actually, it is not too hard to prove, but it is messy. So we will just write out a very simple case: Given any numbers $n_i$ and writing $n := \sum_{i=1}^{K} n_i$, we have

$$P(N_1(t) = n_1, N_2(t) = n_2, \ldots, N_K(t) = n_K)$$

$$= P(N_1(t) = n_1, N_2(t) = n_2, \ldots, N_K(t) = n_K \mid N(t) = n) P(N(t) = n)$$

$$= \left( \begin{array}{c} n \\ n_1 \ n_2 \ \cdots \ n_K \end{array} \right) \prod_{i=1}^{K} p_i^{n_i} \cdot \frac{e^{-\lambda t} (\lambda t)^n}{n!}$$

$$= \frac{n!}{n_1! \ n_2! \ \cdots \ n_K!} \prod_{i=1}^{K} p_i^{n_i} \cdot \frac{e^{-\lambda t} (\lambda t)^n}{n!}$$

$$= \prod_{i=1}^{K} e^{-\lambda p_i t} \frac{(\lambda p_i t)^{n_i}}{n_i!}$$

$$= \prod_{i=1}^{K} P(N_i(t) = n_i).$$

This is only the simplest case of independence, since here all the times were the same, $t$. But this should be enough to give an idea of how much pain is saved by the conceptual proof above.

Corollary. The sum of independent Poisson random variables is a Poisson random variable whose mean is the sum of the means. If a \( \text{Pois}(\lambda) \) number of objects is classified independently as type \( i \) with probability \( p_i \) each, then the number of type-\( i \) objects is \( \text{Pois}(\lambda p_i) \) and these numbers are independent.

Proof. The first part follows from Exercise 16 by embedding the Poisson random variables in Poisson processes as their values at time 1. ... Note that this proof is accomplished without any real calculation (if Exercise 16 was done the best way) and gives the result of Exercise 1(a) (p. 47, 1.8). The second part follows from the theorem also by embedding and gives the result of Exercise 1(b). ... Again, this requires no further calculation. 

Example MASS 5.16. No device works perfectly. Suppose that a Geiger counter fails to register an arriving radioactive particle with probability 0.1, independently of everything else. Suppose also that radioactive particles arrive at the counter according to a Poisson(1000/sec) process. If during a certain 1/100 sec, the counter registered 4 particles, what is the probability that actually more than 5 arrived?

Solution. This is the probability that it missed at least 2. The missed particles form a Poisson(100/sec) process, so the chance that there were at least 2 in that interval is

\[
1 - (e^{-1}1^0/0! + e^{-1}1^1/1!) = 0.264^+.
\]

Another amazing fact about Poisson processes is that, for any \( t > 0 \), given that \( N(t) = n \), the \( n \) events in \((0,t]\) are distributed the same as \( n \) i.i.d. \( \text{Unif}[0,t] \) points that we'll call “dots” (Theorem 2.3.1).

If we think about Bernoulli trials, then this is actually quite intuitive. ... Moreover, we see that to estimate the success probability in \( n \) trials, we can do no better than use the number of successes total: Given that there are \( k \) successes, the distribution of those \( k \) is uniform on the \( n \) trials. In particular, it does not depend on \( p \). Similarly, to estimate \( \lambda \) given \( N(s) \) for \( s \leq t \), we can do no better than use \( N(t) \). These are so-called sufficient statistics.

In fact, another way to construct a Poisson process is to choose i.i.d. \( Y_0, Y_1, Y_2, \ldots \sim \text{Pois}(\lambda) \) and, given \( \langle Y_i \rangle_{i=0}^\infty \), choose \( Y_i \) independent \( \text{Unif}[i, i+1] \) random variables. The resulting set of dots on \([0,\infty)\) gives the arrival times. (Here, the positive integers

could be replaced by any sequence of times increasing to \( \infty \), with a corresponding change in the Poisson parameters.) To see that this is a Poisson process with rate \( \lambda \), we need only check that increments are independent and stationary. ...

To check independence, it’s enough to show that \( (N(t_i) - N(t_{i-1}))_{i=1}^{r} \) are independent for \( 0 = t_0 < t_1 < \cdots < t_r = 1 \). ... But these numbers are obtained by taking \( Y_0 \) dots, each independently having probability \( t_i - t_{i-1} \) of falling in \( (t_{i-1}, t_i] \); so we may apply the above corollary.

Now we check that \( N(s + t) - N(s) \overset{D}{=} N(t) \). This is clear for \( s + t \leq 1 \). ... To see that it holds for \( s + t \leq 2 \), it suffices to show that the dots in \( [0, 2] \) are uniform and independent, given that their number is \( Y_0 + Y_1 \sim \text{Pois}(2\lambda) \). ... Stated another way, it suffices to show that if we choose \( \text{Pois}(2\lambda) \) dots in \( [0, 2] \) independently and uniformly, then the numbers in \( [0, 1] \) and \( [1, 2] \) are independent \( \text{Pois}(\lambda) \) and given that a point falls in one of the two halves, it is uniformly distributed in that half. ... But note that if we choose \( \text{Pois}(2\lambda) \) dots in \( [0, 2] \) independently and uniformly, then each has chance \( 1/2 \) of falling in \( [0, 1] \), so by the corollary, the number that fall in \( [0, 1] \) is \( \text{Pois}(\frac{1}{2} \cdot 2\lambda) = \text{Pois}(\lambda) \) and they are clearly i.i.d. \( \text{Unif}[0, 1] \); similarly for those in \( [1, 2] \); and these are independent of each other. Likewise, we see it holds for \( s + t \leq n \) for any \( n \).

A calculational proof of almost the same statement is given in the book on p. 67. It is not long.

**Example 2.3(a).** Suppose that travelers arrive at a train station according to the times of a \( \text{Poisson}(\lambda) \) process during the interval \( [0, T] \). If the train leaves at time \( T \), what is the expected total waiting time of the passengers (i.e., the sum of all the waiting times)?

\[ \downarrow \]

**Solution.** Condition on the number of passengers and then use their uniform distribution.

**Example MASS 5.11.** Suppose that customers arrive at an automatic teller machine (ATM) according to the times of a \( \text{Poisson}(\lambda) \) process. The ATM records the start and finish times of each customer’s service, but not when the customers arrive (if they join a queue). Suppose that the ATM is opened for business one day at 7:00am and that the log that day turns out to begin as follows:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Customer No.</th>
<th>Service Start Time</th>
<th>Service Completion Time</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>0</td>
<td>7:30</td>
<td>7:34</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1</td>
<td>7:34</td>
<td>7:40</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2</td>
<td>7:40</td>
<td>7:42</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3</td>
<td>7:45</td>
<td>7:50</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

What is the expected arrival time of Customer 1 given the above information?

\[ \uparrow \]
Solution. Let $S_n$ be the arrival time of customer $n$. We want

$$E[S_1 \mid S_0 = 7:30, S_1 \leq 7:34, S_2 \leq 7:40, S_3 = 7:45].$$

This is the same as

$$E[S_1 \mid S_0 = 7:30, S_1 \leq 7:34, S_2 \leq 7:40, N(7:40) - N(7:30) = 2].$$

We begin by calculating the conditional distribution of $S_1$. We also will convert time to minutes after 7:30 and count arrivals only after that. We have for $x \leq 4$,

$$P[S_1 \leq x \mid S_1 \leq 4, S_2 \leq 10, N(10) = 2] = P[S_1 \leq x \mid S_1 \leq 4, N(10) = 2] = \frac{P[S_1 \leq x, S_1 \leq 4 \mid N(10) = 2]}{P[S_1 \leq 4 \mid N(10) = 2]} = \frac{P[S_1 \leq x \mid N(10) = 2]}{P[S_1 \leq 4 \mid N(10) = 2]}.$$

Now we use the theorem to calculate that

$$P[S_1 \leq x \mid N(10) = 2] = 1 - P[S_1 > x \mid N(10) = 2] = 1 - \left(\frac{10 - x}{10}\right)^2 = \frac{20x - x^2}{100}.$$

Therefore

$$P[S_1 \leq x \mid S_1 \leq 4, S_2 \leq 10, N(10) = 2] = \frac{20x - x^2}{64}.$$

This allows us to calculate the expectation as

$$\int_0^4 \frac{20 - 2x}{64} \, dx = 11/6.$$  

Converting to the original time scale, this gives exactly 7:31:50am. (That this is independent of $\lambda$ should have been anticipated once we formulated it as depending only on probabilities conditional on $N(10) = 2$.)

**Example PM 5.10 (The Coupon Collector’s Problem).** There are $m$ different types of coupons. Each time you collect one, it has probability $p_j$ ($1 \leq j \leq m$) of being of type $j$, independently of the past. How many coupons do you expect to have to collect in order to have a complete set?
Solution. We use a method known as “Poissonization”: it consists in introducing Poisson random variables or processes where there are none apparent in the problem.

We may suppose that the coupons are collected at the times of a Poisson process $N(\cdot)$ with rate 1. Classifying by type of coupon decomposes this into $m$ independent Poisson processes with rates $p_j$. Let $X(j)$ be the first waiting time of the $j$th process. Then $X := \max X(j)$ is the time when a complete collection is amassed. We want to know how many coupons, $Y$, have been collected at this time. Now $X = \sum_{i=1}^{Y} T_i$, where $\langle T_i \rangle$ are the interarrival times of $N(\cdot)$. Therefore, $E[X] = E[Y] = E[T] = E[Y]$. (Note that although $Y = N(X)$, we cannot calculate $E[Y] = E[E[N(X) \mid X]]$ easily, since $N(X)$ is at least $m$ and so does not have a Poisson distribution.)

Thus, it remains to calculate $E[X]$. Now $\forall t > 0$

$$P[X \leq t] = P[\forall j \ X(j) \leq t] = \prod_{j=1}^{m} (1 - e^{-p_j t}).$$

Therefore

$$E[X] = \int_{0}^{\infty} P[X > t] \, dt = \int_{0}^{\infty} \left[ 1 - \prod_{j=1}^{m} (1 - e^{-p_j t}) \right] \, dt.$$ 

(To get the maximum amount of fun out of this example, show that if $p_j \equiv \frac{1}{m}$, then $E[X] = m \sum_{i=1}^{m} 1/i \sim m \log m$ by changing variables to $x := 1 - e^{-t/m}$. Another way to do this particular case is to calculate $E[X]$ by the result of Exercise 19(b).)

We now study counting processes that may not have stationary increments, called (nonhomogeneous) Poisson processes:

**Theorem.** Suppose that $N(\cdot)$ is a simple counting process with independent increments, $N(0) \equiv 0$, and $\forall t \ P[N(\cdot) \text{ jumps at } t] = 0$. Then $\forall t \ \exists m(t) < \infty \text{ and } N(t) \sim \text{Pois}(m(t))$. Also, $m$ is continuous.

If $m(t) = \int_{0}^{t} \lambda(s) \, ds$ for some function $\lambda(\cdot)$, then $\lambda(\cdot)$ is called the intensity function of $N(\cdot)$.

Intuition: when there is an intensity function, we use coins of varying probabilities of heads.
Proof. A similar proof as the stationary case works, except that we use the Poisson Con-
vergence Theorem in greater generality. Fix \( t \) and let \( X_{n,i} \) be the indicator that there is
an event in the interval \(((i-1)t/2^n, it/2^n] \) for \( 1 \leq i \leq 2^n \). We first show that
\[
\max_{1 \leq i \leq 2^n} P[X_{n,i} = 1] \to 0.
\]
If this were not true, then compactness of \([0, t] \) would yield \( t_0 \in [0, t] \) and integers \( i_k, n_k \)
such that \( \inf_k P[X_{n_k,i_k} = 1] > 0 \) and \( i_k/t^{2/n_k} \to t_0 \). \( \ldots \) We can enlarge the intervals so as
to be decreasing and contain \( t_0 \), while still having length tending to \( 0 \). But then \( P[N(\cdot) \)
jumps at \( t_0 \] \( > 0 \), a contradiction. \( \ldots \)

The fact that \( N(\cdot) \) is simple guarantees that \( \sum_i X_{n,i} \uparrow N(t) \), whence the Poisson
Convergence Theorem implies that \( N(t) \) is a Poisson random variable. Let \( m(t) \in [0, \infty) \)
be its mean.

We finally show that \( m \) is continuous. Given \( t_0 \), let \( s < t_0 < t \). The number of events
in \((s, t]\) is \( \text{Pois}(m(t) - m(s)) \): By the above argument starting at time \( s \), it is Poisson;
its mean is \( E[N(t) - N(s)] = m(t) - m(s) \). If \( m(t) - m(s) \not\to 0 \) as \( t - s \to 0 \), then the
probability of an event occurring in \((s, t]\) \( \not\to 0 \) either, making the probability of an event
at \( t_0 \) positive, a contradiction. \( \ldots \)

As before, an equivalent definition of nonhomogeneous Poisson process is the following:

Theorem. Suppose that \( N(\cdot) \) is a counting process with independent increments and
\( N(0) \equiv 0 \). If there is a continuous function \( m: [0, \infty) \to [0, \infty) \) such that
\[
\forall s, t \geq 0 \ N(s + t) - N(s) \sim \text{Pois}(m(s + t) - m(s)),
\]
then \( N(\cdot) \) is a nonhomogeneous Poisson process.

Proof. As before, it suffices to show that for each \( k \geq 1 \), \( N(\cdot) \) does not jump by more than
\( 1 \) in \([0, k]\), \( \ldots \) Fix \( k \). Let \( C \) be such that \( 1 - e^{-x} - xe^{-x} \leq Ce^2 \) for \( 0 \leq x \leq \epsilon \leq 1 \), \( \ldots \) Let
\( \epsilon \in (0, 1) \). Because \( m \) is continuous, \( m \) is uniformly continuous on \([0, k]\), so \( \exists \delta > 0 \) such
that if \( s, t \in [0, k] \) satisfy \( |s - t| < \delta \), then \( |m(s) - m(t)| < \epsilon \). Let \( A \) be the event that there
is a jump by more than \( 1 \) in \([0, k]\). Let \( A_{n,i} \) be the event that \( N(ik/n) - N((i-1)k/n) \geq 2 \). Then
\( A \subset \bigcup_{i=1}^n A_{n,i} \) for each \( n \). Let \( n > 1/\delta \). Because
\[
N(ik/n) - N((i-1)k/n) \sim \text{Pois}(m(ik/n) - m((i-1)k/n)),
\]
it follows that
\[
P(A_{n,i}) \leq C(m(ik/n) - m((i-1)k/n))^2 \leq C\epsilon^2(m(ik/n) - m((i-1)k/n)).
\]
Hence \( P(A) \leq \sum_{i=1}^n P(A_{n,i}) \leq C\epsilon^2 m(k) \). Since this holds for all \( \epsilon > 0 \), it follows that
\( P(A) = 0 \). \( \blacksquare \)
Example PM 5.20. Dogbert runs a hotdog stand. He observes that customers arrive at an increasing rate from opening time at 8:00am until 11:00am, then at a steady rate until 1:00pm, and then at a decreasing rate until closing at 5:00pm. He models the arrival times as a nonhomogeneous Poisson process with piecewise linear continuous intensity (with 3 pieces). He measures that on average, the number of customers before 11am is 37.5, the number at lunch (the steady period) is 40, and the number after 1pm is 64.

(a) Assume Dogbert’s model. What is the expected number of customers arriving between 8:30am and 9:30am?

(b) What is the probability that no customers arrive between 8:30am and 9:30am?

Solution. The lunch rate per hour is 20, the 8am rate is 5, and (not needed) the 5pm rate is 12. This gives (a) 10 and (b) $e^{-10}$.

Discuss why nonhomogeneous Poisson processes might be reasonable models in general.

Here is a way to construct nonhomogeneous Poisson processes. Let $m: [0, \infty) \to [0, \infty)$ be a continuous, nondecreasing function with $m(0) = 0$. Suppose that $\tilde{N}(\cdot)$ is a homogeneous Poisson process of rate 1. Define $N(t) := \tilde{N}(m(t))$. Then $N(\cdot)$ is a Poisson process with mean function $m(\cdot)$. 

Using measure theory, one can prove that the mean function $m(\cdot)$ uniquely determines $N(\cdot)$ (in law). 

It is easy to check that the sum of a finite number of independent (nonhomogeneous) Poisson processes is a Poisson process. For simplicity, we state the following for Poisson processes with continuous intensity:

**Theorem.** Let $N(\cdot)$ be a Poisson process with continuous intensity $\lambda(\cdot)$. Let $p_i(\cdot)$ ($i = 1, \ldots, k$) be continuous functions with values in $[0, 1]$ and $\sum_{i=1}^{k} p_i(t) = 1$ for all $t \geq 0$. Classify each event as type $i$ with probability $p_i(t)$ if it occurs at time $t$, independently of other events. Then the type-$i$ events form a Poisson process with intensity $\lambda_i(t) := \lambda(t)p_i(t)$ and these $k$ Poisson processes are mutually independent.

The theorem holds even if $p_i(\cdot)$ are not continuous, but we won’t prove that.

**Proof.** Let $N_i(\cdot)$ be independent Poisson processes with intensity $\lambda_i(t)$. Then their sum has the same law as $N(\cdot)$. It suffices to show that the events are classified independently as given.
Consider a very small interval \((t-h, t+h]\). With probability \(o(h)\), it has \(\geq 2\) events. Thus, the probability that there exists an event in \((t-h, t+h]\) of type \(i\) given that there exists an event in \((t-h, t+h]\) is 
\[
\frac{\int_{t-h}^{t+h} \lambda_i(s) \, ds}{\int_{t-h}^{t+h} \lambda(s) \, ds} + o(1),
\]
whence an event at time \(t\) is type \(i\) with probability \(p_i(t)\). This is independent of other events, as seen by considering disjoint intervals. 

Example 2.3(b), 2.4(b) (The M/G/\(\infty\) Queue). There is a standard scheme for coding the type of queue considered. The last of the three symbols indicates the number of servers (here, \(\infty\)); they are always assumed to have i.i.d. service times. The first symbol indicates the type of arrival stream: “M” stands for “memoryless”, which means that the arrivals form a homogeneous Poisson process. The middle symbol indicates the type of service distribution; “M” would be exponential, while “G” is “general”, with c.d.f. equal to \(G\).

Let \(N_1(t)\) be the number of customers that have completed service by time \(t\) and \(N_2(t)\) be the number still in service at time \(t\). What is their joint distribution? Is \(N_1(\cdot)\) a Poisson process?

\[\downarrow\]

Solution. Now \(N_1(t) + N_2(t)\) is the Poisson arrival process. Let its rate be \(\lambda\). At time \(t\), each customer in \((0,t]\) has completed service with probability \(G(t-s)\), given that his arrival was at time \(s\). Fix \(t_0\). Then on \((0,t_0]\), we see a Poisson process with an event at time \(s\) classified as “done” or “in service” with probability \(G(t_0-s)\) and \(\overline{G}(t_0-s)\). This gives that
\[
N_1(t_0) \sim \text{Pois}
\left(\int_0^{t_0} \lambda G(u) \, du\right),
\]
and \(N_1(t_0), N_2(t_0)\) are independent (we changed variable to \(u := t_0 - s\)). (So far, we could have used instead the fact that arrivals are independent, uniform on \((0,t_0]\) given their number.)

Of course, \(N_2(\cdot)\) is not an increasing process, but \(N_1(\cdot)\) is. In fact, it is a counting process that jumps by 1 and starts at 0. Also, it has no chance of jumping at any pre-specified (deterministic) time, so to prove that \(N_1(\cdot)\) is, in fact, a Poisson process, we need to show that it has independent increments. If we consider any finite collection of disjoint
intervals and classify arrivals according to during which of these intervals they have completed service, or none, then the theorem gives what we want by looking at a time after all these intervals. We also have that the intensity function of $N_1(\cdot)$ is $\lambda G(\cdot)$ by what we have already calculated.

Read (if you wish an alternative development) pp. 69--70 and §2.4 (pp. 78--82) in the book.

We can think of a Poisson process as a random set of points in $[0, \infty)$. This leads us to consider random points in other settings, such as euclidean space. A point process is a random (finite or infinite) set of points; equivalently, it is a stochastic process $N$ indexed by sets in euclidean space: $N(A)$ is the number of points in $A \subseteq \mathbb{R}^d$. Clearly, if $\langle A_i \rangle$ are disjoint, then $N(\bigcup A_i) = \sum N(A_i)$. We assume that if $A$ is bounded, then $N(A) < \infty$ a.s. (i.e., we make this part of our hypotheses without stating this assumption explicitly, or in other words, these are the only point processes we will study).

Demo

A sample of a Poisson point process of intensity 1000.

Denote the size (length, area, volume, etc.) of $A$ by $|A|$.

Theorem. Let $N(\cdot)$ be a point process such that when $\langle A_i \rangle_{i=1}^r$ are disjoint, $\langle N(A_i) \rangle_{i=1}^r$ are independent and such that $N(A)$ has a distribution depending only on $|A|$. Then $\exists \lambda \in [0, \infty)$ such that $\forall A \ N(A) \sim \text{Pois}(\lambda |A|)$.

This is called a Poisson point process with intensity $\lambda$.

More generally, we have:
Theorem. Let $N(\cdot)$ be a point process such that $\langle A_i \rangle_{i=1}^r$ disjoint $\Rightarrow \langle N(A_i) \rangle_{i=1}^r$ independent and $\forall x \ P[N\{\{x\}\}] = 0 = 1$. Then there exists a function $\mu \geq 0$ on subsets such that

$$\forall A \ N(A) \sim \text{Pois}(\mu(A)),$$

$$A \text{ bounded } \Rightarrow \mu(A) < \infty,$$

$$\langle A_i \rangle \text{ disjoint } \Rightarrow \mu(\bigcup A_i) = \sum \mu(A_i),$$

and $\forall x \ \mu(\{x\}) = 0.$

Conversely, for all such $\mu$, there is such a point process.

\[ \downarrow \]

Proof. $\Rightarrow$: Similar to before, but subdivide euclidean space by regions.

$\Leftarrow$: Start with a subdivision of euclidean space by regions. In region $A$, take a Pois($\mu(A)$) number of points distributed independently according to $\mu/\mu(A)$, i.e., $P[\text{point } \in B] = \mu(B)/\mu(A)$ for $B \subseteq A$. This really needs measure theory for full justification. The proof that this works is as before. \[ \blacksquare \]

\[ 4" \uparrow \]

§2.5. Compound Poisson Random Variables and Processes.

If $X_i \sim F$ are i.i.d. and $N$ is a Pois($\lambda$) random variable independent of all $X_i$, then the sum

$$W := \sum_{i=1}^{N} X_i$$

is called a compound Poisson random variable with parameters $\lambda$ and $F$. Similarly, if $N(\cdot)$ is a Poisson process independent of all $X_i$ (which are still i.i.d.), then

$$W(t) := \sum_{i=1}^{N(t)} X_i$$

is called a compound Poisson process. Thus, each $W(t)$ is a compound Poisson random variable. E.g., $N(\cdot)$ might describe the times of insurance claims and $X_i$ the amounts of the claims. As another example, the special case where $X_i \sim \text{Bin}(1,p)$ gives the thinned Poisson processes considered before. Note that the compound Poisson random variable with parameters $\lambda$ and $\text{Bin}(1,p)$ is also a compound Poisson random variable with parameters $\lambda p$ and $\text{Bin}(1,1)$, i.e., a Pois($\lambda p$) random variable.
Example 2.5(a). Suppose that $X_s \ (s \geq 0)$ are independent random variables but not necessarily identically distributed. Let $\langle S_i \rangle$ be the event times of a Poisson process $N(\cdot)$, independent of all $X_s$. Interestingly, it turns out that

$$W(t) := \sum_{i=1}^{N(t)} X_{S_i},$$

although not necessarily a compound Poisson process, is, for each $t$, a compound Poisson random variable!

Solution. For each $t$, condition on $N(t)$ and use the fact that the event times are independent and uniform on $[0,t]$. If $N(\cdot)$ is Pois($\lambda$) and $X_s \sim F_s$, then $W(t)$ has parameters $\lambda t$ and $F$, where

$$F(x) := \frac{1}{t} \int_0^t F_s(x) \, ds.$$ 

Even if we allow $X_i$ in the definition of compound Poisson process to have different distributions, we may still not get a compound Poisson process.
Chapter 3
Renewal Theory

We now generalize Poisson processes to counting processes where the interarrival times are i.i.d. with an arbitrary nonnegative distribution. Let \( \langle X_i \rangle_{i=1}^{\infty} \) be i.i.d. \( \geq 0 \), \( P[X = 0] < 1 \), \( \mu := E[X] \in (0, \infty] \), \( S_n := \sum_{i=1}^{n} X_i \). Since \( S_n/n \to \mu \) a.s., we may define

\[
N(t) := \max \{ n ; S_n \leq t \}
\]

for \( t \geq 0 \). This counting process is called a renewal process. We even allow \( X_i \) to take the value \( +\infty \) with positive probability, but this will be useful only in the chapter on Markov chains.

The time \( S_n \) is called the \( n \)th renewal. The reason for the name is that if we count time from \( S_n \) onwards, then process starts afresh, independent of the past, in the sense that if \( f(x_1, x_2, x_3, \ldots) \) is a function, then \( f(X_{n+1}, X_{n+2}, X_{n+3}, \ldots) \) has the same distribution regardless of \( n \), and is also independent of \( X_1, X_2, \ldots, X_n \).

Examples:

- Replace light bulbs when they burn out, assuming that only a single bulb is lit at each instant.
- Cars passing a fixed location. (Since some distance between cars is necessary if they are in the same lane, a Poisson process would not be as accurate.)
- If customer arrival times in a queueing process form a renewal process, then the times of the starts of successive busy periods generate a second (delayed) renewal process. In case the arrival times are exponential, then also the times of the starts of successive free periods (no customers) determine a renewal process. But not in general:

2" ... Suppose that the arrivals occur with interarrival times 1 or 5 and that the service time is always 2. Suppose that the arrival times start as 1, 2, 3, 8, 13. Let \( S_1, S_2, S_3, \ldots \) be the beginnings of the free periods. Then \( S_1 = 7 \) and \( S_2 = 10 \). In particular, \( P[S_2 - S_1 = 3] > 0 \). However, \( P[S_3 - S_2 = 3 \mid S_2 - S_1 = 3] = 0 \). Thus, \( S_3 - S_2 \) and \( S_2 - S_1 \) are dependent. (Note that \( S_1 \) is the delay.)
If $X_1$ has a different distribution than $X_n$ for $n \geq 2$, then the process is called a **delayed renewal process**.

We have the following important and intuitive property:

**Proposition 3.3.1.** \( \lim_{t \to \infty} N(t)/t = 1/\mu \) a.s.

**Proof.** If \( P[X = \infty] > 0 \), then \( \mu = \infty \) and \( N(\cdot) \) is bounded, whence the result is clear. Otherwise, we compare to the previous and the next arrival times: ... **Important picture here** \( S_N(t) \leq t < S_N(t) + 1 \), so

\[
\frac{S_N(t)}{N(t)} \leq \frac{t}{N(t)} < \frac{S_N(t) + 1}{N(t) + 1} \cdot \frac{N(t) + 1}{N(t)}.
\]

The left-hand side tends to \( \mu \), as does the first term on the right-hand side, while the last term tends to 1. \[ \square \]

Note that if \( N(\cdot) \) is a delayed renewal process, then the same result holds (provided \( P[X_1 < \infty] = 1 \)).

We start with a straightforward example.

**Example PM 7.5.** A battery has a lifetime that is Unif[30, 60] in hours. If a battery is replaced as soon as it fails, what is the long-run rate at which batteries are replaced?

\[ \downarrow \]

**Solution.** We have \( \mu = 45 \) hours, so the rate is one battery every 45 hours.

Next is a somewhat more complicated example.

**Example p. 154, Problem 3.9(a), (b).** Customers arrive at a single-server bank at the times of a Poisson process with rate \( \lambda \). If the server is busy, however, an arriving customer goes home rather than waits (the customer is “lost”). Let the service time be random with c.d.f. \( G \). (This is called an M/G/1/1 queue, where the 4th number indicates the capacity of the system.)

(a) At what rate do customers enter the bank?

(b) What proportion of arrivals actually enter the bank?

\[ \downarrow \]

**Solution.** (a) By the memoryless property, the mean time between entering customers is \( \mu = \mu_G + 1/\lambda \), whence the rate is \( 1/\mu = \lambda/(1 + \lambda \mu_G) \).

(b) Let \( N_A \) be the arrival process and \( N_E \) the entering process. Then \( \lim N_E(t)/N_A(t) = 5'' \uparrow \lim(N_E(t)/t)/(N_A(t)/t) = 1/(1 + \lambda \mu_G) \).
In the preceding examples, we used Proposition 3.3.1 in the way one would expect. However, it can also be used to deduce probabilities where there is no renewal process; rather, one introduces a renewal process and uses Proposition 3.3.1 in the reverse direction. This will become clearer in an example. It is a useful method more generally.

**Example PM 7.8.** A spinner has $n$ outcomes. Outcome $i$ has probability $p_i$, where $\sum_{i=1}^{n} p_i = 1$. Also given are $k_i \in \mathbb{Z}^+$. The spinner is spun until some $i$ appears $k_i$ times in a row; player $i$ is then declared the winner. Determine each player’s chance of winning and the expected number of spins in a game.

**Solution.** Suppose that this game is played repeatedly. By the SLLN, the probability that $i$ wins is the long-run proportion of games that $i$ wins, which is

$$r_i / \sum_{j=1}^{n} r_j,$$

where $r_j := \text{rate per spin that } j \text{ wins}$. . . . For each $j$, wins by player $j$ constitute renewals. Thus, by Proposition 3.3.1, $r_j = 1/(\text{expected number of spins until } j \text{ wins})$, so by Exercise 8 (p. 50, 1.18), $r_j = (1 - p_j)/(p_j^{-k_j} - 1)$. Therefore,

$$P[i \text{ wins a game}] = \frac{(1 - p_i)/(p_i^{-k_i} - 1)}{\sum_{j=1}^{n}(1 - p_j)/(p_j^{-k_j} - 1)}.$$

Also, the endings of games constitute a renewal process, so by Proposition 3.3.1, the expected number of spins per game is $1/(\text{rate per spin at which games end})$

$$= 1/ \sum_{j=1}^{n} r_j = 1/ \sum_{j=1}^{n}(1 - p_j)/(p_j^{-k_j} - 1).$$

E.g., if $n = 2$ and $k_2 = 1$, then the game is fair iff $p_1 = 2^{-1/k_1}$.

E.g., if we draw cards with replacement from a standard deck, then the expected number of cards until we draw 4 consecutive cards of the same suit is 85. This is problem 3.24.

Renewal processes “begin anew” after each renewal, just as Poisson processes do after each event. (In addition, Poisson processes begin anew at each instant by the memoryless property.) We justified that in one sense earlier. Here is another formal statement and proof for the first renewal; induction gives the same for later renewals.
**Theorem.** If $N(\cdot)$ is a renewal process with first arrival time $X_1$, then $\langle N(X_1+t) - 1; t \geq 0 \rangle$ has the same distribution as $N(\cdot)$, even conditional on $X_1$.

**Proof.** They are both counting processes, so we have to show that they have the same finite-dimensional marginals. So let $0 < t_1 < t_2 < \cdots < t_n < \infty$ and $k_1, k_2, \ldots, k_n$ be nonnegative integers. We have to show that

$$P[\forall i \text{ } N(X_1 + t_i) - 1 = k_i \mid X_1] = P[\forall i \text{ } N(t_i) = k_i].$$

Write out the left-hand side in terms of $S_{k_{i+1}}$ and $S_{k_{i+2}}$.

The function $m(t) := E[N(t)]$ is called the **renewal function** of the process. The previous theorem implies that

$$m(t) = E[N(t)] = E[E[N(t) \mid X_1]]$$

$$= E[(1 + m(t - X_1))1_{[X_1 \leq t]}] = \int_{[0,t]} (1 + m(t - x)) \, dF_X(x)$$

$$= F_X(t) + \int_{[0,t]} m(t - x) \, dF_X(x).$$

This is called the **renewal equation**, but it is usually too hard to solve (for $m(\cdot)$ in terms of $F_X(\cdot)$).

Nevertheless, we can prove that Proposition 3.3.1 holds also in expectation:

**Theorem 3.3.4 (The Elementary Renewal Theorem).** $\lim_{t \to \infty} m(t)/t = 1/\mu$.

In order to prove this, we want to take expectation of

$$S_{N(t)+1} = \sum_{i=1}^{N(t)+1} X_i$$

and get

$$(3.3.3) \quad E[S_{N(t)+1}] = \mu(m(t) + 1).$$

\[Note \text{ that the analogous equation is not true for } E[S_{N(t)}], \text{ even if } X \text{ is exponential}.\]
This is true, yet it doesn’t follow from our preceding work since \(N(t) + 1\) is not independent of \(\langle X_i \rangle\). However, for each \(n\), the event \([N(t) + 1 = n]\) is independent of \(\langle X_i; i \geq n + 1 \rangle\). Thus, (3.3.3) follows from the following theorem: [Note that (3.3.3) is trivial if \(\mu = \infty\) since \(N(t) + 1 \geq 1\).]

We are paying close attention in the statement and proof to hypotheses involving finiteness of expectations because later we will use this to deduce that some expectations are infinite.

**Theorem 3.3.2 (Wald’s Equation).** Let \(X_n\) be random variables all with the same mean \(\mu\). Suppose that \(N\) is an \(\mathbb{N}\)-valued random variable such that \(\forall n \geq 0 \ \forall i \geq 1 \ [N = n]\) is independent of \(X_{n+i}\). If either

(a) all \(X_n \geq 0\) or

(b) \(E[N] < \infty\) and \(\sup_n E|X_n| < \infty\),

then

\[
E\left[\sum_{n=1}^{N} X_n \right] = \mu \cdot E[N].
\]

**Proof.** Let \(I_n := 1_{[N \geq n]} = 1 - \sum_{i=0}^{n-1} 1_{[N=i]}\). Suppose temporarily that \(X_n\) is bounded. Since \(X_n\) and \(1_{[N=n]}\) are independent for \(i \leq n - 1\), we have

\[
E[X_n I_n] = E[X_n (1 - \sum_{i=0}^{n-1} 1_{[N=i]})] = EX_n - \sum_{i=0}^{n-1} EX_n E[1_{[N=i]}] = E[X_n] E[I_n].
\]

It follows from this result that even if \(X_n\) is not bounded, then, since \((|X_n| \wedge M) \text{ sgn} \ X_n\) is bounded and independent of \(1_{[N=i]}\) for \(i \leq n - 1\), we have

\[
E\left[(|X_n| \wedge M) \text{ sgn} \ X_n I_n \right] = E\left[(|X_n| \wedge M) \text{ sgn} \ X_n \right] E[I_n].
\]

Taking \(M \to \infty\), we get that \(E[X_n I_n] = E[X_n] \cdot E[I_n]\): in case (a), we use the MCT, whereas in case (b), we use the LDCT. Likewise, \(E[|X_n| I_n] = E[|X_n|] E[I_n]\).

In case (a), we have

\[
E\left[\sum_{n=1}^{N} X_n \right] = E\left[\sum_{n=1}^{\infty} X_n I_n \right] = \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} E[X_n I_n] = \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} E[X_n] E[I_n] = \mu \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} E[I_n]
\]

\[
= \mu \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} P[N \geq n] = \mu E[N].
\]

In case (b), calculate first \(E\left[\sum_{n=1}^{N} |X_n| I_n \right] \leq E[N] \cdot \sup E|X_n| < \infty\), so we may apply Fubini’s theorem or the LDCT to justify the previous calculation. \(\Box\)
Proof of Theorem 3.3.4. We are going to prove this by proving two inequalities, 1

a lower bound on the liminf and an upper bound on the limsup.

We first show \( \liminf m(t)/t \geq 1/\mu \). Since \( S_{N(t)+1} > t \), we have \( \mu(m(t) + 1) = E[S_{N(t)+1}] > t \), whence we get the inequality. . . .

For the other direction, that is, \( \limsup m(t)/t \leq 1/\mu \), the difficulty is that \( X_{N(t)+1} \) may be very large (we want to use an upper bound on \( S_{N(t)+1} \)). Thus, we use the method of truncation: Fix \( M \in (0, \infty) \) and define

\[
X_n := X_n \wedge M.
\]

This gives a new renewal process \( \overline{N}(t) \geq N(t) \) with mean \( \overline{m}(t) \geq m(t) \). Write \( \mu_M := E[X \wedge M] \). Note that \( \lim_{M \to \infty} \mu_M = \mu \) by the MCT. Now (3.3.3) gives

\[
\mu_M(\overline{m}(t) + 1) = E[\overline{S}_{N(t)+1}] \leq t + M,
\]

so \( \limsup \overline{m}(t)/t \leq 1/\mu_M \). Therefore \( \limsup m(t)/t \leq 1/\mu_M \). Since \( M \) is arbitrary, we get \( \limsup m(t)/t \leq 1/\mu \).

The same holds for delayed renewal processes, provided \( X_1 < \infty \) a.s.: Conditional on \( X_1 \), the expected number of renewals of the delayed process \( N_D(\cdot) \) by time \( t \) is 0 if \( X_1 > t \) and is \( 1 + m(t - X_1) \) otherwise, where \( m \) is the renewal function for the non-delayed renewal process determined by \( X_2, X_3, \ldots \). Therefore \( m_D(t) := E[N_D(t)] = E[(1 + m(t - X_1))1_{X_1 \leq t}] \). Since \( m(t)/t \to 1/\mu \), there is some constant \( c \) such that for all large \( t \), we have \( (1 + m(t))/t \leq c \). Therefore we can apply the BCT to conclude that \( m_D(t)/t \to 1/\mu \).

Read pp. 98--108 in the book.

According to both Proposition 3.3.1 and the elementary renewal theorem, \( N(t) \) is approximately \( t/\mu \). In fact, we can say more: it is approximately normally distributed. This is not an instance of the CLT, since \( N(t) \) is not a sum. However, \( N(\cdot) \) is related to sums, so we will be able to deduce it from the usual CLT.

**Theorem 3.3.5.** Let \( N(\cdot) \) be a renewal process whose interarrival times have finite mean \( \mu \) and finite standard deviation \( \sigma \). Then as \( t \to \infty \),

\[
\frac{N(t) - t/\mu}{(\sigma/\mu)\sqrt{t/\mu}} \Rightarrow N(0, 1).
\]

Note that \( t/\mu \) is not (usually) the mean of \( N(t) \), but we saw in the elementary renewal theorem that the mean is asymptotic to \( t/\mu \). We can also see intuitively why the standard deviation of \( N(t) \) is asymptotic to the denominator above: To first order, \( N(t) \) is about \( t/\mu \). However, \( S_{[t/\mu]} \) has a standard deviation of \( \sigma\sqrt{[t/\mu]} \), so to correct the number of terms to get the true value of \( N(t) \), we should add a number of terms of order \( \sigma\sqrt{t/\mu}/\mu \).
Proof. Given any real $y$, write $r_t := t/\mu + y(\sigma/\mu)\sqrt{t/\mu}$. Also, write $r'_t := \lceil r_t \rceil$. We have

\[
\left[ \frac{N(t) - t/\mu}{(\sigma/\mu)\sqrt{t/\mu}} < y \right] = [N(t) < r_t] = [N(t) < r'_t] = [S_{r'_t} > t]
\]

\[
= \left[ \frac{S_{r'_t} - r'_t\mu}{\sigma\sqrt{r'_t}} > \frac{t - r'_t\mu}{\sigma\sqrt{r'_t}} \right].
\]

Now

\[
\frac{t - r_t\mu}{\sigma\sqrt{r_t}} = -y \left( 1 + \frac{y\sigma}{\sqrt{t\mu}} \right)^{-1/2} \to -y
\]

as $t \to \infty$. Since $|r'_t - r_t| < 1$, the same holds with $r'_t$ in place of $r_t$. . . . Therefore the CLT tells us that the probability of the event above tends to $1 - \Phi(-y) = \Phi(y)$, where $\Phi$ is the c.d.f. of $N(0,1)$. . . .

**Example MASS 8.13.** Suppose that a part in a machine can be obtained from two different sources, A and B. Each time the part fails, it is replaced by a new one, but the sources are i.i.d., coming from A with probability 0.3 and from B with probability 0.7. (The source is also independent of everything else.) Lifetimes of parts are exponentially distributed; if the source is A, the mean is 8 days, while if B, the mean is only 5 days. However, parts from A take 1 day to install, while those from B take only 1/2 day to install. Installation times are not random. If the machine is working at the beginning of the year, what is the approximate distribution of the number of failures during the year?

\[\downarrow\]

**Solution.** If $X$ is the interfailure time, then $E[X] = 6.55$ days, $E[X^2] = 82.175$ days$^2$, whence $\text{Var}(X) = 39.2725$ days$^2$. This gives an answer of $N(55.725, 51.01)$. Note that \[\uparrow\] starts of the machine are not renewals.

\[\downarrow\]

The bus-waiting paradox: Suppose bus times are deterministic and alternate between 1 minute and 10 minutes. Thus, half of the buses take 10 minutes. But if you go out at a random time, you are more likely to get a bus that takes longer. Most (10/11) of the time it seems that buses take 10 minutes. The paradox lies partly in conflating two different measures of “time”: real time or counting buses. When the interarrival times are random, \[\uparrow\] if we condition on the interarrival times, the same thing holds, of course.
Recall from Exercise 30 that $X_{N(t)+1}$ is stochastically larger than $X$ (i.e., $F_{X_{N(t)+1}} \geq F_X$). This is intuitive from the viewpoint that longer intervals have a greater chance of capturing a given point, $t$. As $t \to \infty$, we should expect the length $X_{N(t)+1}$ to converge in law to a size-biased version of $X$, where we say that $\hat{X}$ is a size-biased version of $X$ if

$$F_{\hat{X}}(x) = \frac{1}{E[X]} \int_0^x s \, dF_X(s) ; \quad \text{think } dF_{\hat{X}}(x) = \frac{1}{E[X]} x \, dF_X(x).$$

(Examples: If $X \sim \frac{1}{2} \delta_1 + \frac{1}{2} \delta_{10}$, then $\hat{X} \sim \frac{1}{11} \delta_1 + \frac{10}{11} \delta_{10}$. If $X \sim \frac{1}{3} \delta_1 + \frac{2}{3} \delta_{10}$, then $\hat{X} \sim \frac{1}{21} \delta_1 + \frac{20}{21} \delta_{10}$.) This is the same as

$$E[h(\hat{X})] = \frac{1}{E[X]} E[Xh(X)],$$

for all bounded $h$ as immediate calculation shows (using $E[h(Y)] = \int_0^\infty h(s) \, dF_Y(s)$). E.g.,

$$E[\hat{X}] = E[X^2]/E[X].$$

Furthermore, if we let

$$A(t) := t - S_{N(t)}$$

be the age of the process at time $t$, then we expect that the law of $A(t)$ given $X_{N(t)+1} = x$ should converge to $\text{Unif}[0, x]$, and thus that

$$(A(t), X_{N(t)+1}) \Rightarrow \mathcal{L}(\text{Unif}[0, \hat{X}], \hat{X}).$$

(N1)

Actually, if $X$ is a lattice random variable, i.e., $\exists d > 0$ such that $P[X \in d\mathbb{Z}] = 1$, then this cannot be true; instead, if $d$ is the largest real number such that $P[X \in d\mathbb{Z}] = 1$, where $d$ is called the period of $X$, then

$$(A(t), X_{N(t)+1}) \Rightarrow \mathcal{L}(\text{Unif}_d[0, \hat{X}], \hat{X})$$

(N2)

as $t \to \infty$ in $d\mathbb{Z}$, where $\text{Unif}_d[0, dn]$ is the uniform distribution on $\{0, d, \ldots, (n-1)d\}$. These two limit results, (N1) for non-lattice random variables and (N2) for lattice random variables, are true when $E[X] < \infty$, but we won’t prove them.

Example (Poisson Process). Suppose that $X \sim \text{Exp}(\lambda)$. Then $S_{N(t)+1} - t \sim \text{Exp}(\lambda)$. What is the distribution of $A(t)$?
**Solution.** By embedding the Poisson process in a point process on all of $\mathbb{R}$ (or by considering the event times in $[0, t]$ to be uniform i.i.d. given how many there are), we see that it is exponential truncated at $t$, i.e., the minimum of an exponential random variable and $t$.

Note what happens as $t \to \infty$.

Assume that $X$ is non-lattice. Then as we said above,

$$A(t) \Rightarrow \mathcal{L}(\text{Unif}[0, \hat{X}]),$$

i.e., if $g$ has the form $g = 1_{(-\infty, x]}$, then

$$\lim_{t \to \infty} E\left[g(A(t))\right] = E\left[g(\text{Unif}[0, \hat{X}])\right] = E\left[E\left[g(\text{Unif}[0, \hat{X}]) \mid \hat{X}\right]\right]$$

$$= E\left[\frac{1}{\hat{X}} \int_0^{\hat{X}} g(s) \, ds\right] = \frac{1}{\mu} E[X] \cdot \frac{1}{\hat{X}} \int_0^{\hat{X}} g(s) \, ds$$

$$= \frac{1}{\mu} E\left[\int_0^\infty g(s)1_{[X>s]} \, ds\right] = \frac{1}{\mu} \int_0^\infty g(s)\mathcal{F}(s) \, ds. \quad (N3)$$

Actually, this holds for other $g$ as well. We also need $\mu = E[X] < \infty$ in order to define $\hat{X}$. However, this is not needed for the final result, as long as we interpret $1/\mu = 0$ when $\mu = \infty$. The full theorem is as follows:

**Theorem 3.4.2 (Probabilistic Form of the Key Renewal Theorem).** If $F$ is not lattice, $\mu = E[X] \leq \infty$, and $gF$ is directly Riemann integrable on $[0, \infty)$, then

$$\lim_{t \to \infty} E\left[g(A(t))\right] = \frac{1}{\mu} \int_0^\infty g(s)\mathcal{F}(s) \, ds.$$

Likewise, if $F$ is lattice with period $d$, $\mu = E[X] \leq \infty$, and $\sum_{n=0}^\infty g(nd)\mathcal{F}(nd)$ exists and is finite, then

$$\lim_{n \to \infty} E\left[g(A(nd))\right] = \frac{d}{\mu} \sum_{n=0}^\infty g(nd)\mathcal{F}(nd).$$

Here, we say that a function $L$ is **directly Riemann integrable** on $[0, \infty)$ if the upper and lower Riemann integrals of $L$ over all of $[0, \infty)$ are equal and finite, when using equally spaced divisions of $[0, \infty)$ for integrating over $[0, \infty)$. It can be shown that besides $L \in C_c([0, \infty])$, ..., it suffices that $L$ be a decreasing nonnegative function with $\lim_{x \to \infty} \int_0^x L(t) \, dt < \infty$.

The lattice case actually can be written in the very same form as the non-lattice case, as long as we restrict $t$ to $d\mathbb{Z}$. 
It is not hard to check that (N1), (N2), and the key renewal theorem hold for delayed
renewal processes since they hold for renewal processes (with the usual caveat on $X_1$ being
finite).

We still have to justify heuristically the lattice case. This follows similar reasoning as
above (when $\mu < \infty$): Since

$$A(nd) \Rightarrow \mathcal{L}(\text{Unif}_d[0, \hat{X}]),$$

we have

$$\lim_{n \to \infty} E[g(A(nd))] = E[g(\text{Unif}_d[0, \hat{X}])] = E[E[g(\text{Unif}_d[0, \hat{X})] \mid \hat{X}]]
= E\left[\frac{1}{\hat{X}/d} \sum_{n=0}^{\hat{X}/d-1} g(nd)\right] = \frac{1}{\mu} E[X \cdot \frac{d}{\hat{X}} \sum_{n=0}^{\hat{X}/d-1} g(nd)]
= \frac{d}{\mu} E\left[\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} g(nd)1_{X > nd}\right] = \frac{d}{\mu} \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} g(nd)F(nd).$$

Note that the **residual life** at $t$, defined to be $Y(t) := S_{N(t)+1} - t$, has the same limit
law as $A(t)$ in the non-lattice case, since it is Unif$(0, \hat{X})$, which is the same as Unif$(0, \hat{X})$.
(In the lattice case, there is a difference since $A(t)$ cannot be equal to $\hat{X}$, while $Y(t)$ can
be.) This makes sense intuitively if we look backwards in time.

The statement you will see of the key renewal theorem in the book and in other books
looks quite different. It is phrased purely analytically, with no apparent probabilistic
content:

**Theorem 3.4.2 (Analytic Form of the Key Renewal Theorem).** If $F$ is not
lattice, $\mu = E[X] \leq \infty$, and $h$ is directly Riemann integrable on $[0, \infty)$, then

$$\lim_{t \to \infty} \int_{[0,t]} h(t-x) \, dm(x) = \frac{1}{\mu} \int_{0}^{\infty} h(s) \, ds.$$

Likewise, if $F$ is lattice with period $d$, $\mu = E[X] \leq \infty$, and $\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} h(nd)$ exists and is finite,
then

$$\lim_{n \to \infty} \sum_{k=0}^{n} h((n-k)d) \left[ m(kd) - m((k-1)d) \right] = \frac{d}{\mu} \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} h(nd).$$

Here, we are using the notion of Stieltjes integral with respect to $m(\cdot)$, which is defined
just as it was with respect to c.d.f.’s. To discuss this form of the theorem, we will use the
fact that $\int h(x) \, dm_1(x) + \int h(x) \, dm_2(x) = \int h(x) \, d(m_1 + m_2)(x)$. 

When the theorem is applied in a probabilistic context, it is usually more useful to have it stated probabilistically. But here is the heuristic reason why the theorems are the same. Write

\[ F_n := F_{S_n}. \]

We have, for any function \( g \) that is 0 on \((-\infty, 0)\),

\[
E \left[ g(A(t)) \right] = E \left[ g(A(t)) \sum_{n \geq 0} 1_{[N(t) = n]} \right]
\]

\[
= E \left[ \sum_{n \geq 0} g(A(t)) 1_{[S_n \leq t, S_{n+1} > t]} \right]
\]

\[
= \sum_{n \geq 0} E \left[ g(t - S_n) 1_{[S_n \leq t, S_{n+1} > t]} \right]
\]

\[
= \sum_{n \geq 0} E \left[ g(t - S_n) 1_{[S_{n+1} > t]} \right]
\]

\[
= \sum_{n \geq 0} E \left[ E \left[ g(t - S_n) 1_{[S_{n+1} > t]} \mid S_n \right] \right]
\]

\[
= \sum_{n \geq 0} E \left[ g(t - S_n) P[S_{n+1} > t \mid S_n] \right]
\]

\[
= \sum_{n \geq 0} E \left[ g(t - S_n) \overline{F}(t - S_n) \right]
\]

\[
= \sum_{n \geq 0} \int_{[0,t]} g(t - s) \overline{F}(t - s) dF_n(s)
\]

\[
= g(t) \overline{F}(t) + \int_{[0,t]} g(t - s) \overline{F}(t - s) dm(s)
\]

since \( F_0(s) = 1_{[0,\infty)} \) and

\[
m(s) = E[N(s)] = \sum_{n \geq 1} P[N(s) \geq n] = \sum_{n \geq 1} P[S_n \leq s] = \sum_{n \geq 1} F_n(s).
\]

1\(^*\) Now let \( t \to \infty \). To get the theorem in the form above, use \( g := h/\overline{F}. \ldots \)

**Theorem 3.4.1 (Blackwell's Renewal Theorem).** For a non-lattice renewal process,

\[
m(t + a) - m(t) \to a/\mu.
\]

If \( X \) is lattice with period \( d \), then

\[
E[\text{number of renewals at } nd] \to d/\mu
\]
as \( n \to \infty \). In the lattice case, if only one renewal can occur at a given time, this is equivalent to

\[
P[\text{renewal at nd}] \to d/\mu.
\]

This follows from the analytic form of the key renewal theorem by using \( h := 1_{[0,a]} \) in the non-lattice case and \( h := 1_{\{0\}} \) in the lattice case.

**Example 3.5(a) (Application of Delayed Renewal Processes to Patterns).** Let \( X_n \) be i.i.d. and discrete. Given a **pattern**, i.e., a sequence of possible values of \( X \), say, \( \langle x_1, x_2, \ldots, x_k \rangle \), let \( N(t) \) be the number of times the pattern occurs by time \( \lfloor t \rfloor \). E.g., if the pattern is \( \langle 0, 1, 0, 1 \rangle \) and the sequence \( \langle X_n \rangle \) is \( \langle 1, 0, 1, 0, 1, 0, 1, 0, 1, 0, 1, 0, 1, 0, 1, 0, 1, 0, 1, 0, 1, \ldots \rangle \), then the pattern occurs at times 5, 7, 13, \ldots and \( N(13) = 3 \). Clearly \( N(\cdot) \) is a delayed renewal process. What’s the expected time \( \mu \) between patterns?

**Solution.** By Blackwell’s theorem,

\[
\frac{1}{\mu} = \lim_{n \to \infty} P[\text{pattern at time } n] = \prod_{i=1}^{k} P[X = x_i].
\]

**Remark.** We could also use simply the elementary renewal theorem:

\[
\frac{1}{\mu} = \lim_{n \to \infty} \frac{m(n)}{n} = \lim_{n \to \infty} \frac{1}{n} \sum_{i=1}^{n} P[\text{pattern at time } i].
\]

**Prove abelian convergence for sums.**

If a coin has probability \( p \) of H, what is the expected number of tosses until the pattern HTHT occurs?

By the above, the expected time from HTHT to the next occurrence is \( 1/p^2q^2 \), where \( q := 1 - p \), while to get to the first HTHT, one must first see HT. Also, to get from HT to HTHT has the same expected number of tosses as to get from HTHT to the next HTHT, i.e., \( 1/p^2q^2 \), so (the expected time to the first HTHT) = (the expected time to HT) + \( 1/p^2q^2 \). Since (the expected time to HT) = (the expected time between HT’s) = \( 1/pq \), we get \( 1/pq + 1/p^2q^2 \) as our answer.

Note how this method also provides another solution to Exercise 8 (p. 50, 1.18 in the book).
Similar reasoning works with an underlying i.i.d. process having more than 2 possible outcomes. E.g., if \( P(\text{outcome } j) = p_j \), then
\[
E[\text{time to 012301}] = E[\text{time to 01}] + \frac{1}{p_0^2 p_1^2 p_2 p_3} = \frac{1}{p_0 p_1} + \frac{1}{p_0^2 p_1^2 p_2 p_3}.
\]


Suppose that a system is on for time \( Z_1 \), then off for time \( Y_1 \), then on for time \( Z_2 \), then off for time \( Y_2 \), etc. We suppose that \( (Z_n, Y_n) \) are i.i.d., but for each \( n \), \( Z_n \) and \( Y_n \) may be dependent. Still, the partial sums of \( (Z_n + Y_n) \) form a renewal process. The times \( Z_1, Z_1 + Y_1, Z_1 + Y_1 + Z_2, Z_1 + Y_1 + Z_2 + Y_2, Z_1 + Y_1 + Z_2 + Y_2 + Z_3, \ldots \) form what is called an **alternating renewal process**.

**Theorem 3.4.4.** For an alternating renewal process, if \( Z + Y \) has finite mean and is non-lattice, then
\[
\lim_{t \to \infty} P[\text{system is on at time } t] = \frac{E[Z]}{E[Z] + E[Y]}.
\]

**Proof.** Let \( N(\cdot) \) be the renewal process corresponding to \( (Z_n + Y_n) \) and \( A(\cdot) \) be the associated age process. We have \( P[\text{on at } t] = E\left[P[\text{on at } t \mid A(t), N(t)]\right] \). Now for \( a \geq 0 \),
\[
P[\text{on at } t \mid A(t) = a, N(t) = n] = P[\text{on at } t \mid A(t) = a, S_n \leq t, S_{n+1} > t]
\begin{align*}
&= P[Z_{n+1} > a \mid S_n = t - a, S_n \leq t, S_{n+1} > t] \\
&= P[Z_{n+1} > a \mid S_n = t - a, Z_{n+1} + Y_{n+1} > a] \\
&= P[Z_{n+1} > a \mid Z_{n+1} + Y_{n+1} > a] \\
&= \mathcal{F}_Z(a)/\mathcal{F}_{Z+Y}(a).
\end{align*}
\]
Therefore, \( P[\text{on at } t] = E\left[\mathcal{F}_Z(A(t))/\mathcal{F}_{Z+Y}(A(t))\right] \). We can apply the key renewal theorem with \( g(s) := \mathcal{F}_Z(s)/\mathcal{F}_{Z+Y}(s) \) (and \( F := F_{Z+Y} \)) since \( \mathcal{F}_Z \) is a nonnegative decreasing function with finite integral \( E[Z] \). This tells us that \( P[\text{on at } t] \) converges to
\[
\frac{1}{E[Z+Y]} \int_0^\infty \frac{\mathcal{F}_Z(s)}{\mathcal{F}_{Z+Y}(s)} \mathcal{F}_{Z+Y}(s) \, ds.
\]

\( 2^* \ldots \)

Of course,
\[ \lim_{t \to \infty} P[\text{off at time } t] = 1 - \frac{E[Z]}{E[Z] + E[Y]} = \frac{E[Y]}{E[Z] + E[Y]} . \]

Note that \( \lim_{t \to \infty} P[\text{on at time } t] \) is equal to the long-run expected proportion of time that the system is on, since if \( I(t) \) is the indicator that the system is on at time \( t \), then this long-run expected proportion is
\[ \lim_{t \to \infty} E \left[ \frac{1}{t} \int_0^t I(s) \, ds \right] = \lim_{t \to \infty} \frac{1}{t} \int_0^t E[I(s)] \, ds = \lim_{t \to \infty} \frac{1}{t} \int_0^t P[\text{on at } s] \, ds. \]

In Exercise 43, you will be asked to show that also in the lattice case, the long-run proportion of time that the system is on equals \( E[Z]/(E[Z] + E[Y]) \).

**Example MASS 8.29.** Let an M/G/1/1 queue have arrival rate \( \lambda \). If \( Q(t) \) denotes the number of customers in the system at time \( t \) (which is either 0 or 1), find \( \lim_{t \to \infty} P[Q(t) = 1] \).

**Solution.** If we interpret \( Q(t) = 1 \) as on time and \( Q(t) = 0 \) as off time, then we see a (delayed) alternating renewal process. (It could be done the other way, too. Recall the example of a delayed renewal process at the beginning of the chapter.) The mean on time is \( \mu_G \) and the mean off time is \( 1/\lambda \) (by the memoryless property), so the answer is
\[ \frac{\mu_G}{\mu_G + 1/\lambda} . \]

**Example MASS 8.30.** Let a G/M/1/1 queue have service rate \( \mu \). If \( Q(t) \) denotes the number of customers in the system at time \( t \), find \( \lim_{t \to \infty} P[Q(t) = 1] \).

**Solution.** If we interpret \( Q(t) = 1 \) as on time and \( Q(t) = 0 \) as off time, then we see a (delayed) alternating renewal process. (This will not work the other way, however.) The mean on time (length of busy period) is \( 1/\mu \), but the mean off time is more difficult to calculate. Condition that a certain busy period has length \( s \). The arrivals starting at the beginning of this service period form a renewal process with interarrival distribution \( G(\cdot) \). The total cycle time is then the time that this renewal process first exceeds \( s \). By (3.3.3), this has expectation \( \mu_G(m_G(s) + 1) \). Therefore, the unconditioned expected cycle time is
\[ \int_0^{\infty} \mu_G(m_G(s) + 1) e^{-\mu s} \, ds, \]
which gives the answer \( 1/ (\mu^2 \mu_G \int_0^{\infty} (m_G(s) + 1) e^{-\mu s} \, ds) \).

Note that these answers agree for an M/M/1/1 queue.
Example 3.4(a). A store stocks a certain commodity. It tries to keep the amount on hand in the interval \([s, S]\). It does this by ordering \(S - x\) whenever the amount on hand dips to \(x < s\), but not ordering otherwise. Thus, the store restocks to level \(S\) after such an order, which is assumed to be executed and received instantaneously. Customers arrive at the times of a renewal process with non-lattice interarrival distribution \(F\). Each customer independently buys an amount with distribution \(G\). (If a customer wants to buy more than is on hand, then the customer buys only what is on hand.) What is the limiting distribution of the inventory level (the amount on hand), which is considered always to be in \([s, S]\)?

Solution. Let \(X(t)\) denote the inventory at time \(t\). We will calculate \(\lim_{t \to \infty} P[X(t) \geq x]\). Fix \(x \in [s, S]\). Say that the system is on when \(X(t) \geq x\) and off otherwise. Then we see a non-lattice alternating renewal process, with the beginning of a cycle at the time of each order. In order to apply Theorem 3.4.4, let \(D_k\) be i.i.d. with the distribution \(G\). For any \(y\), define

\[
L_y := \min \left\{ n; \sum_{k=1}^{n} D_k > S - y \right\}.
\]

Then in each cycle, the number of customers until the inventory falls below \(x\) has distribution equal to that of \(L_x\), while the number of customers in the total cycle has distribution equal to that of \(L_s\). Also, let \(X_i \sim F\) be i.i.d. independent of \(D_k\). Then in each cycle, the time until the inventory falls below \(y\) has distribution equal to that of \(\sum_{i=1}^{L_y} X_i\). Thus,

\[
\lim_{t \to \infty} P[X(t) \geq x] = \frac{E\left[\sum_{i=1}^{L_x} X_i\right]}{E\left[\sum_{i=1}^{L_s} X_i\right]} = \frac{E[L_x] \mu_F}{E[L_s] \mu_F} = \frac{E[L_x]}{E[L_s]}.
\]

Now if \(N_G(\cdot)\) is the renewal process defined by \(\langle D_k \rangle\), then \(L_y = N_G(S - y) + 1\), whence \(E[L_y] = m_G(S - y) + 1\) in the notation of the renewal function for \(N_G(\cdot)\). Thus,

\[
\lim_{t \to \infty} P[X(t) \geq x] = \frac{m_G(S - x) + 1}{m_G(S - s) + 1}.
\]

(If \(x = S\), this is still correct: the numerator is 1, and indeed \(X(t) = S\) generally holds for intervals of \(t\). If we wanted \(x > S\), this is not correct, but then \(L_x = 0\), so \(E[L_x] = 0\). If \(x = s\), this is correct because \(X(t) \geq s\) always. If \(x < s\), then \(L_x = L_s\), so the formula again has to be modified.) Of course, this isn’t so explicit, but in any particular case, one can calculate numerically \(m_G(\cdot)\) by iterating the renewal equation,

\[
m(t) = F_X(t) + \int_{[0, t]} m(t - x) dF_X(x).
\]
Now we go the other way: We use Theorem 3.4.4 in order to calculate the means.

**Example 3.5(b).** Suppose that a machine has \( n \) components, each of which functions during the on times of an independent alternating renewal process. More precisely, component \( i \) functions for an \( \text{Exp}(\lambda_i) \) time, then is down for an \( \text{Exp}(\mu_i) \) time. (Note: I switched the notation from the book, which gave the means, not the parameters.) The machine as a whole functions as long as at least one component functions. Note that the breakdowns of the machine constitute a delayed renewal process. When the periods of functioning are considered as the off periods, we see a delayed alternating renewal process. (We could also make these the on periods.) What is the mean time between breakdowns? What is the mean length of a functioning period?

**Solution.** Component \( i \) has a limiting down probability \( (1/\mu_i)/(1/\lambda_i+1/\mu_i) = \lambda_i/(\lambda_i+\mu_i) \). Since the components operate independently, the limiting down probability of the machine is the product \( \prod_{i=1}^{n} \lambda_i/(\lambda_i+\mu_i) \). By Theorem 3.4.4, this equals the mean down time divided by the mean cycle time. Now the mean cycle time is what we want to know. By the memoryless property, the down periods have distribution \( \text{Exp}(\sum_{i=1}^{n} \mu_i) \), whence the mean down length is \( 1/\sum_i \mu_i \). Therefore, the mean cycle time is \( (\sum_j \mu_j \prod_{i=1}^{n} \lambda_i/(\lambda_i+\mu_i))^{-1} \). The mean length of an up period is the difference between the mean cycle time and the mean down period.

Suppose that at the \( n \)th renewal (i.e., \( n \)th event of a renewal process), we receive a reward \( R_n \). We allow \( R_n \) to depend on \( X_n \), but assume that \((X_n, R_n)\) are i.i.d. The total reward earned by time \( t \) is

\[
R(t) := \sum_{n=1}^{N(t)} R_n.
\]

The stochastic process \( R(\cdot) \) is called a **renewal-reward process**. For example, a renewal process is a renewal-reward process; and a compound Poisson process is a renewal-reward process.

**Theorem 3.6.1.** If \( E[|R|] < \infty \) and \( E[X] < \infty \), then as \( t \to \infty \), we have

\[
\frac{R(t)}{t} \to \frac{E[R]}{E[X]} \quad \text{a.s.}
\]

and

\[
\frac{E[R(t)]}{t} \to \frac{E[R]}{E[X]}.
\]
Proof. The first statement is rather easy to prove, but the 2nd will require some work. For the first, write the quotient as
\[
\frac{R(t)}{t} = \frac{R(t)}{N(t)} \cdot \frac{N(t)}{t} \to E[R] \cdot \frac{1}{E[X]} \text{ a.s.}
\]
by the SLLN, using the fact that \(N(t) \to \infty\) as \(t \to \infty\) and Proposition 3.3.1.

For the second statement, we use truncation, as in the proof of Theorem 3.3.4, the elementary renewal theorem. In order to do that, we need to decompose \(R_n\) as \(R_n = R^+_n - R^-_n\), where \(R^\pm_n \geq 0\). Defining \(R^\pm(t) := \sum_{n=1}^{N(t)} R^\pm_n\), we have \(R(t) = R^+(t) - R^-(t)\), so we see that it suffices to prove the result when \(R_n \geq 0\).

Assume now that \(R_n \geq 0\). We have that \([N(t) + 1 = n] \text{ is independent of } \langle R_i ; i > n \rangle\).

1" ... Therefore Wald’s equation gives us
\[
E \left[ \sum_{n=1}^{N(t)+1} R_n \right] = (m(t) + 1)E[R].
\]
Since \(m(t)/t \to 1/E[X]\), the result desired follows if \(E[R_{N(t)+1}]/t \to 0\) as \(t \to \infty\). Rather than show this directly, we take an easier approach. Namely, this certainly holds if \(R_n\) is bounded. Therefore, given \(M < \infty\), we have
\[
\liminf_{t \to \infty} E[R(t)]/t \geq \lim_{t \to \infty} E \left[ \frac{1}{t} \sum_{n=1}^{N(t)} (R_n \wedge M) \right] = E[R \wedge M]/E[X].
\]
Taking the limit as \(M \to \infty\) and using the MCT, we obtain \(\liminf_{t \to \infty} E[R(t)]/t \geq E[R]/E[X]\). ... On the other hand, we have
\[
\limsup_{t \to \infty} E[R(t)]/t \leq \lim_{t \to \infty} E \left[ \frac{1}{t} \sum_{n=1}^{N(t)+1} R_n \right] = \lim_{t \to \infty} \frac{m(t) + 1}{t} E[R] = E[R]/E[X].
\]
1" Putting these inequalities together gives us the desired limit. ...

The reward need not be given exactly at the renewal times. It could accumulate during the renewal cycle. For example, as long as we define \(R(t)\) to lie between \(\sum_{n=1}^{N(t)} R_n\) and \(\sum_{n=1}^{N(t)+1} R_n\), then the theorem applies to \(R(t)\). This is because, as shown during the proof, \(\sum_{n=1}^{N(t)} R_n/t\) and \(\sum_{n=1}^{N(t)+1} R_n/t\) have the same limit. ...
EXAMPLE 3.6(a). Consider an alternating renewal process. Suppose that a reward accumulates at a unit rate during the on periods, but not during the off periods. Then Theorem 3.6.1 tells us that a.s., the long-run proportion of time that the system is on is equal to the same limit as in Theorem 3.4.4. . . . So this gives us another way to interpret all our results about alternating renewal processes. It also tells us that the on period during a cycle need not be an interval at the beginning of the cycle. Finally, it says that even in the lattice case, the long-run proportion that the system is on is equal to the same limit as in Theorem 3.4.4.

EXAMPLE 3.6(c). An amusement park ride only starts when there are \( N \) passengers waiting. Passengers arrive at the times of a renewal process with mean interarrival time \( \mu \). The management must endure the grumbling of waiting passengers, which it quantifies as a cost of \( c \) dollars per unit time per waiting passenger. Also, it costs \( K \) dollars each time the ride is started. What is the average cost per unit time of this operation, and what \( N \) minimizes it?

Solution. The mean cycle time is \( N\mu \) and the mean cost during a cycle is, if \( S_n \) are the arrival times, \( E[\sum_{n=1}^{N} (S_N - S_n)c] + K = \sum_{n=1}^{N} (N - n)\mu c + K = c\mu N(N - 1)/2 + K. \) Dividing, we get \( c(N - 1)/2 + K/(N\mu) \). This is minimized when \( N \) is one of the integers nearest to \( \sqrt{2K/(c\mu)} \).

EXAMPLE PM 7.11. Let \( X_n \) be the lifetimes of items assumed i.i.d. with c.d.f. \( F \). It may be that failure of an item is costly, and so replacement is done when an item has reached age \( T \) if it has not yet failed. Suppose that each replacement costs \( c_r \) and each failure costs an additional \( c_f \). Show that the long-run cost per unit time is (a.s. and in mean)

\[
\frac{c_r + c_fF(T)}{\int_0^T F(x) dx}.
\]

Solution. Each replacement constitutes a renewal. The expected cycle length is thus

\[
E[X \wedge T] = \int_0^\infty P[X \wedge T > x] dx = \int_0^T F(x) dx,
\]

while the expected cost during a cycle is \( c_r + c_fF(T) \). Now apply Theorem 3.6.1.
For example, if $X \sim \text{Unif}[0,a]$, then the long-run cost rate is $\frac{2ac_r + 2cf_T}{2aT - T^2}$ for $0 \leq T \leq a$, and this is minimized at

$$\frac{T}{a} = -\frac{c_r}{c_f} + \sqrt{\left(\frac{c_r}{c_f} + 1\right)^2 - 1}.$$

4" ↑

Read pp. 125--126, 128--129, 133--137 in the book.

One way that delayed renewal processes arise is by beginning our observation of a renewal process at time $t$, rather than at time 0. Then the first renewal time is $Y(t)$ later, where $Y(t)$ is the residual life at time $t$. Now if $t$ happens to be large, $\mu < \infty$, and the interarrival time $X \sim F$ is non-lattice, then we know that $Y(t)$ is approximately a uniform pick on $(0, \hat{X}]$. Use $g := 1_{[0,x]}$ in the key renewal theorem to get

$$\lim_{t \to \infty} P(A(t) \leq x) = \lim_{t \to \infty} E\left[g(A(t))\right] = \frac{1}{\mu} \int_0^\infty g(s)F(s) \, ds = \frac{1}{\mu} \int_0^x F(s) \, ds$$

if $X$ is non-lattice. Define

$$F_e := \text{the c.d.f. of Unif}[0, \hat{X}).$$

Then by the above,

$$F_e(x) = \frac{1}{\mu} \int_0^x F(s) \, ds.$$

To see more formally that $A(t) \Rightarrow F_e$, use this $g$ in the key renewal theorem. To see more formally that $Y(t) \Rightarrow F_e$, which is what we want, use Theorem 3.4.4: Fix $x$. Let the system be “on” at time $t$ when $Y(t) > x$ and “off” when $Y(t) \leq x$. The beginnings of the on periods are the ends of the off periods; we use this convention even if an on period has length 0 (i.e., is empty). In this way, the renewals in the alternating renewal process are the same as the renewals in the original renewal process we started with. Thus, $\lim_{t \to \infty} P[Y(t) \leq x] = E\left[\min\{x, X\}\right]/\mu = F_e(x)$ by Exercise 6 in the homework.

Let’s consider a delayed renewal process with initial time Unif$(0, \hat{X}]$; the other interarrival times have the same distribution as $X$. This is called the equilibrium renewal process associated to the original process because of the following result:
Theorem 3.5.2. Let $N_e(\cdot)$ be a non-lattice equilibrium renewal process. Then $N_e(\cdot)$ has stationary increments and $\forall t \geq 0$ $m_e(t) = t/\mu$ and $Y_e(t) \sim F_e$.

2" Proof. Since $Y(t) \Rightarrow F_e$ as $t \to \infty$, we have that for $s \geq 0$, ...

$$N(t + s) - N(t) \Rightarrow N_e(s) \quad \text{as} \quad t \to \infty.$$ 

In fact, this is true jointly in all $s \geq 0$. Thus, given $s_1, s_2 \geq 0$, we have

$$\mathcal{L}(N_e(s_1 + s_2) - N_e(s_1)) = \lim_{t \to \infty} \mathcal{L}(N(t + s_1 + s_2) - N(t + s_1))$$

$$= \lim_{t \to \infty} \mathcal{L}(N(t + s_2) - N(t))$$

$$= \mathcal{L}(N_e(s_2)),$$

i.e., $N_e(\cdot)$ has stationary increments.

1" In particular, $m_e(kt) = km_e(t)$ for all positive integers $k$ and any fixed $t$. ... Therefore, by the elementary renewal theorem applied to the equilibrium renewal process, which is a delayed renewal process, we have $m_e(t)/t = \lim_{k \to \infty} m_e(kt)/(kt) = 1/\mu$.

Finally, because the increments of $N_e(\cdot)$ are stationary, $\mathcal{L}(Y_e(s)) = \mathcal{L}(Y_e(0)) = F_e$.

1" ... 

1" Is a Poisson process an equilibrium renewal process? ...


Chapter 4

Markov Chains

We now go beyond having real-valued random variables. In this chapter, we consider stochastic processes indexed by \( \mathbb{N} \) (or \( \mathbb{Z}^+ \)) and which can take values in a finite or countable set called the state space. For simplicity, the states will often be labelled 0, 1, 2, ..., but there may be no numerical significance to the labels.

What replaces independence of increments is the Markovian property that the future and the past are independent given the present: given \( n, r, i_0, i_1, \ldots, i_{n+r} \) with \( P[X_n = i_n] > 0 \), consider the past event \( A := [X_0 = i_0, X_1 = i_1, \ldots, X_{n-1} = i_{n-1}] \) and the future event \( B := [X_{n+1} = i_{n+1}, X_{n+2} = i_{n+2}, \ldots, X_{n+r} = i_{n+r}] \). Then

\[
P(A, B \mid X_n = i_n) = P(A \mid X_n = i_n)P(B \mid X_n = i_n). \tag{N1}
\]

These events \( A \) and \( B \) are very basic events. If we sum over all possibilities, then we see that the same equation holds for all pairs of events \( A \) and \( B \) where \( A \) depends only on \( X_j \) for \( j < n \) and \( B \) depends only on \( X_k \) for \( k > n \). 

The Markovian property is equivalent to the following property: \( \forall n \ \forall i_0, \ldots, i_{n+1} \) with \( P[X_0 = i_0, \ldots, X_n = i_n] > 0 \),

\[
P[X_{n+1} = i_{n+1} \mid X_0 = i_0, \ldots, X_n = i_n] = P[X_{n+1} = i_{n+1} \mid X_n = i_n]. \tag{N2}
\]

\( \downarrow \) To see this, suppose first that the Markov property (N1) holds; let \( A \) be as in the definition and let \( B := [X_{n+1} = i_{n+1}] \). Then the left-hand side of (N2) is equal to

\[
P(B \mid A, X_n = i_n) = \frac{P(A, B \mid X_n = i_n)}{P(A \mid X_n = i_n)} = P(B \mid X_n = i_n)
\]

by (N1), which shows (N2). Conversely, suppose that (N2) holds. The calculation we just did shows that (N1) holds for \( A \) as in the definition and for \( B \) of the special form \( B := [X_{n+1} = i_{n+1}] \). Summing over possibilities shows that it also holds for every \( A \) that depends only on times before the present, \( n \). We can also reformulate (N1) as

\[
P(B \mid A, X_n = i_n) = P(B \mid X_n = i_n). \tag{*}
\]
Now suppose that $B$ is general, as in the definition. Let $A$ depend only on the past, $X_j$ for $j < n$. Then we have

$$P(B \mid A, X_n = i_n) = \prod_{j=1}^{r} P(X_{n+j} = i_{n+j} \mid A, X_n = i_n, X_{n+1} = i_{n+1}, \ldots, X_{n+j-1} = i_{n+j-1})$$

$$= \prod_{j=1}^{r} P(X_{n+j} = i_{n+j} \mid X_{n+j-1} = i_{n+j-1})$$

by ($\ast$). Since this does not depend on $A$, it follows that (N1) holds.

The right-hand side of (N2) is known as a transition probability. The analogue of stationary increments is that this doesn’t depend on $n$, only on $i_n$ and $i_{n+1}$; that is,

$$P[X_{n+1} = j \mid X_n = i] =: p_{ij}$$

does not depend on $n$. In this case, the process is called a (homogeneous) Markov chain. From the transition probabilities and the initial distribution $p_i := P[X_0 = i]$, we can calculate all probabilities:

$$P[X_0 = i_0, X_1 = i_1, \ldots, X_n = i_n] = p_{i_0}p_{i_0i_1}p_{i_1i_2} \cdots p_{i_{n-1}i_n}.$$  

It’s really better to say that a Markov chain is a collection of probability measures $P_i$, representing the chain when it starts in state $i$, with the property that

$$P_{i_0}[X_1 = i_1, \ldots, X_{n-1} = i_{n-1}, X_n = i_n, X_{n+1} = i_{n+1}, X_{n+2} = i_{n+2}, \ldots, X_{n+r} = i_{n+r}]$$

$$= P_{i_0}[X_1 = i_1, \ldots, X_{n-1} = i_{n-1}, X_n = i_n]P_{i_n}[X_1 = i_{n+1}, \ldots, X_r = i_{n+r}]$$

for all $n, r$, and $i_0, \ldots, i_{n+r}$. This avoids problems of $p_i$ possibly being 0 for some (even most) $i$. Again, by summing over all possibilities, we see that for all pairs of events $A$ and $B$ where $A$ depends only on $X_m$ for $m < n$ and $B$ depends only on $X_k$ for $k > n$, we have

$$P_i[A, X_n = j, B] = P_i[A, X_n = j]P_j(\tau_n B).$$

Here, we define $\tau_n$ of an event that depends only on $X_k$ for $k > n$ by subtracting $n$ from all the indices of the random variables; i.e.,

$$\tau_n[X_{n+1} = i_{n+1}, X_{n+2} = i_{n+2}, \ldots, X_{n+r} = i_{n+r}] := [X_1 = i_{n+1}, X_2 = i_{n+2}, \ldots, X_r = i_{n+r}]$$

and similarly for unions of such events.
Example (I.I.D. Trials). If $X_n$ are i.i.d., then $\langle X_n \rangle$ is a Markov chain.

Example 4.1(c) (Sums of I.I.D. $Z$-valued Random Variables). Here, the state space is $\mathbb{Z}$. . . .

Example 4.1(a) (The M/G/1 Queue). Let $X_n :=$ the number of customers in the system when the $n$th customer leaves the system, and $X_0 := 0$. The memoryless property of the arrival stream shows that this is a Markov chain. . . . Now

$$X_{n+1} = \begin{cases} X_n - 1 + Y_{n+1} & \text{if } X_n \geq 1, \\ Y_{n+1} & \text{if } X_n = 0, \end{cases}$$

where $Y_{n+1} :=$ the number of arrivals during the period of service of the $(n+1)$st customer. (Note that those customers who arrive during a free period are not counted by any of the $Y_n$. Only customers who have to wait in queue are counted by some $Y_n$.) Thus, $Y_n$ are i.i.d. and for $j \in \mathbb{N}$, with $\lambda$ denoting the rate of the arrivals, we have

$$P[Y = j] = E\left[ P[Y = j \mid \text{service time} ] \right]_{Z \sim G} = E\left[ e^{-\lambda x} (\lambda x)^j / j! \right] = \int_0^\infty e^{-\lambda x} (\lambda x)^j / j! \ dG(x).$$

Thus,

\[ p_i = \begin{cases} 1 & \text{if } i = 0, \\ 0 & \text{otherwise}, \end{cases} \]

\[ p_{0j} = \int_0^\infty e^{-\lambda x} \frac{(\lambda x)^j}{j!} \ dG(x) \quad (j \geq 0), \]

\[ p_{i,i-1+j} = p_{0j} \quad (i \geq 1, \ j \geq 0), \]

\[ p_{i,j} = 0 \quad (i \geq 2, \ j \leq i - 2). \]

\[ \blacklozenge \text{ Read pp. 163--165 in the book.} \]

Note: In Example 4.1(d), Ross says that the case of summands $X_i = \pm 1$ is “simple random walk”. Usually, this is called “nearest-neighbor random walk” and the term “simple” is reserved for the case when $P[X_i = 1] = \frac{1}{2}$. We will not use Ross’s terminology.

Example 4.4(a) (The Gambler’s Ruin Problem). A gambler needs $\$N$ but has only $\$i \ (1 \leq i \leq N - 1)$. He plays games that give him chance $p$ of winning $\$1$ and $q := 1 - p$ of losing $\$1$ each time. When his fortune is either $\$N$ or 0, he stops. What is his chance of success?
Solution. The gambler’s fortune is a Markov chain on \( \{0, 1, \ldots, N\} \). Let \( \alpha_i \) be the probability of success. Then \( \alpha_0 = 0 \), \( \alpha_N = 1 \), and

\[
\text{for } 1 \leq i \leq N - 1 \quad \alpha_i = p\alpha_{i+1} + q\alpha_{i-1},
\]

which gives

\[
\alpha_{i+1} - \alpha_i = \frac{q}{p}(\alpha_i - \alpha_{i-1}).
\]

Therefore

\[
\alpha_{i+1} - \alpha_i = \left(\frac{q}{p}\right)^i (\alpha_1 - \alpha_0) = \left(\frac{q}{p}\right)^i \alpha_1.
\]

To determine \( \alpha_1 \), add these up:

\[
1 = \alpha_N = \sum_{i=0}^{N-1} (\alpha_{i+1} - \alpha_i) = \sum_{i=0}^{N-1} \left(\frac{q}{p}\right)^i \alpha_1,
\]

so

\[
\alpha_1 = \frac{1}{\sum_{i=0}^{N-1} \left(\frac{q}{p}\right)^i}.
\]

By adding only the equations for \( \alpha_1 - \alpha_0, \alpha_2 - \alpha_1, \ldots, \alpha_i - \alpha_{i-1} \), we get

\[
\alpha_i = \sum_{j=0}^{i-1} \left(\frac{q}{p}\right)^j / \sum_{j=0}^{N-1} \left(\frac{q}{p}\right)^j.
\]

For example, when \( p = \frac{1}{2} \), we have \( \alpha_i = i/N \).

For an application to statistics, see Exercise 4.30, p. 224 (with answer in the back).

Let \( p_{ij}^{(n)} \) be the \( n \)-step transition probabilities, i.e.,
\[
p_{ij}^{(n)} := P_i[X_n = j].
\]

1

Note that ...

\[
p_{ij}^{(n+m)} = \sum_k P_i[X_{n+m} = j, X_n = k] = \sum_k P_i[X_n = k] P_k[X_m = j] = \sum_k p_{ik}^{(n)} p_{kj}^{(m)}.
\]

Notice that this is matrix multiplication: If \( P^{(n)} := (p_{ij}^{(n)}) \), then the above equation is \( P^{(n+m)} = P^{(n)} P^{(m)} \), whence \( P^{(n)} = P^n \), where \( P := (p_{ij}) \).

We say that state \( j \) is accessible from state \( i \) if \( \exists n \geq 0 \ p_{ij}^{(n)} > 0 \). If \( i \) and \( j \) are accessible from each other, we say they communicate and write \( i \leftrightarrow j \). It is not hard to check that \( \leftrightarrow \) is an equivalence relation. ... If there is only one equivalence class, the Markov chain is called irreducible. The period of state \( i \) is the g.c.d. of \( \{ n \geq 0; p_{ii}^{(n)} > 0 \} \), written \( d(i) \). If \( d(i) = 1 \), then state \( i \) is called aperiodic.

Proposition 4.2.2. If \( i \leftrightarrow j \), then \( d(i) = d(j) \).

Proof. It suffices to show that \( d(j) \mid d(i) \). [The symbol \( k \mid n \) here stands for “divides” and means that \( n/k \in \mathbb{Z} \).] Let \( p_{ii}^{(s)} > 0 \) and choose \( m, n \) such that \( p_{ij}^{(m)} > 0 \) and \( p_{ji}^{(n)} > 0 \). First, we have \( p_{jj}^{(n+m)} \geq p_{ji}^{(n)} p_{ij}^{(m)} > 0 \), so \( d(j) \mid (n + m) \). Second, we have
\[
p_{jj}^{(n+s+m)} \geq p_{ji}^{(s)} p_{ij}^{(m)} > 0,
\]
so \( d(j) \mid (n + s + m) \). Therefore, \( d(j) \mid s \), so \( d(j) \mid d(i) \).

Let \( f_{ij}^{(n)} \) be the probability that the first* transition into \( j \) is at time \( n \) when the chain starts in state \( i \): \( f_{ij}^{(0)} := 0 \) and for \( n \geq 1 \),
\[
f_{ij}^{(n)} := P_i \left[ X_n = j \text{ and } \forall k \in [1, n-1] \ X_k \neq j \right].
\]

Then \( f_{ij} := \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} f_{ij}^{(n)} \) is the probability of ever making a transition into state \( j \) when the chain starts in \( i \). We call \( j \) recurrent if \( f_{jj} = 1 \) and transient otherwise. The function
\[
G(i,j) := \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} p_{ij}^{(n)},
\]

1

the expected number of visits to \( j \) for the chain started at \( i \), ... is called the Green function of the Markov chain.

* \( f \) stands for “first”
**Proposition 4.2.3.** State $j$ is transient iff $G(j, j) < \infty$. If state $j$ is transient, then a.s. the number of visits to $j$ starting from $j$ is finite, while if state $j$ is recurrent, then a.s. the number of visits to $j$ starting from $j$ is infinite.

**Proof.** Each visit to $j$ is followed (at some time) by another visit to $j$ with probability $f_{jj}$. Hence the number of visits is geometric with mean $(1 - f_{jj})^{-1}$. ... But we already know that the mean number of visits to $j$ when the chain starts in $j$ is $G(j, j)$. Therefore $(1 - f_{jj})^{-1} = G(j, j)$, so that $f_{jj} < 1$ iff $G(j, j) < \infty$ iff the geometric distribution of the number of visits to $j$ has finite mean and hence is finite a.s. ...  

**Corollary.** If a Markov chain has only finitely many states, then some state is recurrent.

**Corollary 4.2.4.** If $i \leftrightarrow j$ and $i$ is recurrent, then $j$ is recurrent.

**Proof.** Fix $m$ and $n$ such that $p_{ij}^{(m)} > 0$ and $p_{ji}^{(n)} > 0$. Then 

$$ \forall s \geq 0 \quad p_{jj}^{(n+s+m)} \geq p_{ji}^{(n)} p_{iij}^{(m)} G(i, i) = \infty. $$

whence $\sum_s p_{jj}^{(n+s+m)} \geq p_{ji}^{(n)} p_{iij}^{(m)} G(i, i) = \infty.

**Proposition.** If $i$ is recurrent and $j$ is accessible from $i$, then $f_{ij} = 1$ and $i \leftrightarrow j$.

**Proof.** Let $X_0 = i$ and fix $n$ such that $p_{ij}^{(n)} > 0$. Let $A_0 := [X_n = j]$ and let $T_1 := \min\{k \geq n; X_k = i\}$. Let $A_1 := [X_{T_1+n} = j]$ and $T_2 := \min\{k \geq T_1 + n; X_k = i\}$. In general, set $A_r := [X_{T_r+n} = j]$ and $T_{r+1} := \min\{k \geq T_r + n; X_k = i\}$. Then $(A_r)$ are independent and each have probability $p_{ij}^{(n)}$, so one of them occurs. ... Thus, $f_{ij} = 1$; since $f_{ii} = 1$, it follows that $i$ is accessible from $j$. ...

Actually, we are using something stronger than the Markov property here and in the proof of Proposition 4.2.3, namely, a special case of what is called the **strong Markov property**. It always holds for discrete-time Markov chains, and usually, but not always, for continuous-time ones. It says the following. Given a Markov chain $(X_n)$, call a random variable $N$ with values in $\mathbb{N} \cup \{\infty\}$ a **stopping time** if for all $n$, the event $[N = n]$ (or, if you prefer, its indicator $1_{[N=n]}$) depends only on $X_0, X_1, \ldots, X_n$, written $[N = n] \in \sigma(X_0, X_1, \ldots, X_n)$; in other words, there are functions $\phi_n:\mathbb{N}^{n+1} \to \{0, 1\}$ such that $N = n$ iff $\phi_n(X_0, X_1, \ldots, X_n) = 1$. Write $\psi(i, B) := P_i\left[(X_0, X_1, \ldots) \in B\right]$. The strong Markov property says that if $N$ is a stopping time and $B$ is an event, then 

$$ P\left[(X_N, X_{N+1}, \ldots) \in B \mid X_0, X_1, \ldots, X_N\right] = \psi(X_N, B) $$

on the event that \( N < \infty \). In the cases we are using, \( X_N \) is a fixed state, so this is easier to interpret. Note that the conditioning on \( X_0, X_1, \ldots, X_N \) implicitly includes conditioning on \( N \). The proof of the strong Markov property is not hard: Given \( i_0, i_1, \ldots \) and \( n \) with \( \phi_n(i_0, i_1, \ldots, i_n) = 1 \), the event \([N = n]\) is implied by the event \([X_0 = i_0, X_1 = i_1, \ldots, X_n = i_n]\), whence

\[
P\left( (X_N, X_{N+1}, \ldots) \in B \mid N = n, X_0 = i_0, X_1 = i_1, \ldots, X_n = i_n \right) = P\left( (X_n, X_{n+1}, \ldots) \in B \mid X_0 = i_0, X_1 = i_1, \ldots, X_n = i_n \right) = P\left( (X_n, X_{n+1}, \ldots) \in B \mid X_n = i_n \right) = \psi(i_n, B)
\]

by the Markov property and homogeneity.

An irreducible Markov chain is called \textit{transient} or \textit{recurrent} according as its states are.

In particular, the Markov chain of Example 1.9(a) is recurrent and a.s. every bead is visited.

**Example 4.2(a).** Consider the Markov chain on \( \mathbb{Z} \) such that, for a given \( p \) and all \( i \), \( p_{i,i+1} = p \) and \( p_{i,i-1} = 1 - p \). If \( p \neq \frac{1}{2} \), then the SLLN shows that the chain is transient. We show that for \( p = 1/2 \), it is recurrent. Note that it has period 2. Now

\[
p^{(2n)}_{00} = \binom{2n}{n} \frac{1}{2^{2n}}.
\]

\( 2^n \) … Stirling’s approximation \( n! \sim \sqrt{2\pi n}(n/e)^n \) yields

\[
p^{(2n)}_{00} \sim \frac{1}{\sqrt{\pi n}}, \quad (N3)
\]

whence \( G(0, 0) = \infty \).

**Second proof.** Let \( q := 1 - p \). Then \( p^{(2n)}_{00} = \binom{2n}{n} p^n q^n \). Now

\[
\left( \frac{-1}{n} \right) = (-1)^n \binom{2n}{n} \frac{1}{2^{2n}}.
\]

2''... Therefore \( G(0, 0) = \sum_{n \geq 0} \left( \frac{-1/2}{n} \right) (-4pq)^n = (1 - 4pq)^{-1/2} = |1 - 2p|^{-1} \). Thus, ...

2''\( G(0, 0) = \infty \) iff \( p = 1/2 \). Also, we see that \( f_{00} = 2(p \wedge q) \) ...

Third proof when \( p = 1/2 \). Let \( a := f_{10} \). By symmetry, we have \( a = f_{-1, 0} \), whence \( f_{00} = a \).

.5''... We also have \( a = (1 + f_{20})/2 \) ... and \( f_{20} = f_{21}f_{10} = a^2 \), ... whence \( (a - 1)^2 = 0 \), so \( a = 1 \).

One of the most famous theorems in probability extends this to higher dimensions:

**Pólya’s Theorem.** Simple random walk on the lattice \( \mathbb{Z}^d \) is transient iff \( d \geq 3 \).

This follows from:

**Proposition.** For simple random walk on \( \mathbb{Z}^d \),

\[
p^{(2n)}_{00} \sim 2 \left( \frac{d}{4\pi n} \right)^{d/2}
\]

as \( n \to \infty \).

Idea of proof: Let \( N_i(n) \) be the number of steps among the first \( n \) in direction \( i \). By the WLLN, \( N_i(2n) \sim 2n/d \) and \( P[\forall i \ N_i(2n) \text{ is even}] \to 2^{-(d-1)} \). Given the values of \( N_i(2n) \), the \( d \) coordinates of \( X_{2n} \) are independent, so the result follows from (N3). ...
§4.3. Limit Theorems.

Let $\mu_{ii}$ denote the expected number of transitions needed to return to $i$ starting from $i$. Let $N_j(n)$ be the number of visits to $j$ by time $n$. These visits form a delayed renewal process if $j$ is recurrent. Actually, even when $j$ is transient, the visits form a delayed renewal process, albeit one with only a finite number of renewals a.s. Thus, with the convention that $a/\infty := 0$ for any finite $a$, our results on renewal theory give:

**Theorem 4.3.1.** If $i \leftrightarrow j$, then

(i) when the Markov chain starts from state $i$, we have $\lim_{n \to \infty} \frac{N_j(n)}{n} = \frac{1}{\mu_{jj}}$ a.s.;

(ii) $\lim_{n \to \infty} \frac{1}{n} \sum_{k=1}^{n} p_{ij}^{(k)} = \frac{1}{\mu_{jj}}$;

(iii) when $j$ is aperiodic, we have $\lim_{n \to \infty} p_{ij}^{(n)} = \frac{1}{\mu_{jj}}$;

(iv) $\lim_{n \to \infty} p_{jj}^{(nd)} = \frac{d}{\mu_{jj}}$, where $d := d(j)$ is the period of $j$.

The results we are using are: (i) Proposition 3.3.1; (ii) The elementary renewal theorem; (iii) and (iv) Blackwell’s renewal theorem. Here, if $j$ (and so $i$) is transient, then we consider separately the two conditions that $j$ is visited or not.

We call a recurrent state $i$ **positive recurrent** if $\mu_{ii} < \infty$ and **null recurrent** otherwise.

**Proposition.** Every finite-state Markov chain has a state that is positive recurrent.

---

**Proposition 4.3.2.** If $i \leftrightarrow j$ and $i$ is null recurrent, then so is $j$.

**Proof.** Let $k$ and $\ell$ be such that $p_{ij}^{(k)} > 0$ and $p_{ji}^{(\ell)} > 0$. Let $d = d(i) = d(j)$. Since $i$ is null recurrent, Theorem 4.3.1(iv) tells us that

$$0 = \lim_{n \to \infty} p_{ii}^{(nd+k+\ell)} \geq \limsup_{n \to \infty} p_{ij}^{(k)} p_{jj}^{(nd)} p_{ji}^{(\ell)} = p_{ij}^{(k)} p_{ji}^{(\ell)} \cdot \frac{d}{\mu_{jj}},$$

whence $\mu_{jj} = \infty$. 

As was the case for renewal processes, stationary Markov chains arise from limiting probabilities used as initial distributions. Recall that \( \langle X_n \rangle \) is stationary if \( \forall k \geq 0 \langle X_n, X_{n+1}, \ldots, X_{n+k} \rangle \) has a joint distribution that is the same for each \( n \). The homogeneous Markov property shows that this follows for all \( k \) if it holds for \( k = 0 \) and \( n \in \{0, 1\} \):

\[
\forall j \quad p_j = P[X_0 = j] = P[X_1 = j] = \sum_{i=0}^{\infty} P[X_0 = i, X_1 = j] = \sum_{i=0}^{\infty} p_i p_{ij}.
\]

We call an initial distribution \( \langle p_j \rangle \) stationary if this holds.

An irreducible Markov chain is called positive recurrent or null recurrent according as its states are.

**Theorem 4.3.3.** Consider an irreducible aperiodic Markov chain and write

\[
\pi_j := \lim_{n \to \infty} p_{ij}^{(n)} = \frac{1}{\mu_{jj}}.
\]

The following are equivalent:

(i) the chain is positive recurrent;

(ii) \( \exists \) a stationary probability distribution;

(iii) \( \langle \pi_j \rangle \) is the unique stationary probability distribution.

In this case, if \( x_i \geq 0, c := \sum_j x_j > 0, \) and \( \forall j \quad x_j = \sum_i x_i p_{ij} \), then \( c < \infty \) and \( \forall i \quad x_i = c \pi_i \).

**Lemma (Fatou’s Lemma for Series).** If \( \alpha_n(j) \geq 0, \lim_{n \to \infty} \alpha_n(j) = \alpha(j), \) and \( \lim_{n \to \infty} \sum_j \alpha_n(j) = \alpha \), then \( \alpha \geq \sum_j \alpha(j) \).

**Proof.** \( \forall J \quad \sum_{j \leq J} \alpha(j) = \lim_n \sum_{j \leq J} \alpha_n(j) \leq \lim_n \sum_{j=0}^{\infty} \alpha_n(j) = \alpha, \) so \( \sum_{j=0}^{\infty} \alpha(j) \leq \alpha \).

**Lemma (LDCT for Series).** If \( |\alpha_n(j)| \leq \beta(j), \sum_{j=0}^{\infty} \beta(j) < \infty, \) and \( \lim_{n \to \infty} \alpha_n(j) = \alpha(j), \) then

\[
\lim_{n \to \infty} \sum_{j=0}^{\infty} \alpha_n(j) = \sum_{j=0}^{\infty} \alpha(j).
\]

**Proof.** We have

\[
\left| \sum_{j=0}^{\infty} \alpha_n(j) - \sum_{j=0}^{\infty} \alpha(j) \right| \leq \sum_{j=0}^{\infty} \left| \alpha_n(j) - \alpha(j) \right| \leq \sum_{j=0}^{J} \left| \alpha_n(j) - \alpha(j) \right| + \sum_{j>J} 2\beta(j).
\]

Now let \( n \to \infty \). Then let \( J \to \infty \).
Proof of Theorem 4.3.3.  

(i) ⇒ (ii): Since \( p_{ij}^{(n+1)} = \sum_k p_{ik}^{(n)} p_{kj} \), Fatou’s Lemma gives 
\( \pi_j \geq \sum_k \pi_k p_{kj} \). Since \( \sum_j p_{ij}^{(n)} = 1 \), Fatou’s Lemma also gives \( \sum_{j=0}^{\infty} \pi_j \leq 1 \). Thus \( \sum_j \pi_j \geq \sum_j \pi_k \sum_j p_{kj} = \sum_k \pi_k \), whence \( \forall j \, \pi_j = \sum_k \pi_k p_{kj} \). Therefore, \( p_i := \pi_i / \sum \pi_j \) form a stationary probability distribution, where the denominator is positive since each \( \pi_j > 0 \).

(ii) ⇒ (iii): If \( \langle p_i \rangle \) is any stationary probability distribution, then \( \forall n, j \, p_j = \sum_{i=0}^{\infty} p_i p_{ij}^{(n)} \), whence by the LDCT, \( p_j = \sum_{i=0}^{\infty} p_i \pi_j = \pi_j \). That is, \( \langle \pi_j \rangle \) is a stationary probability distribution and is unique.

(iii) ⇒ (i) since some \( \pi_j > 0 \).

Finally, in the case of positive recurrence and \( x_j = \sum_i x_i p_{ij} \), we have \( \forall n \, x_j = \sum_i x_i p_{ij}^{(n)} \) (as \( [x_j] \) is a left eigenvector for \( P \)), \( \sum_j x_j \geq \sum_i x_i \pi_j = c \pi_j \). This means that \( c < \infty \), whence the LDCT gives \( x_j = c \pi_j \).

In the irreducible positive recurrent periodic case, the unique stationary probability distribution is still \( \pi_j := 1/\mu_{jj} = \lim_{n \to \infty} p_{jj}^{(nd)}/d \). See Exercise 4.17, p. 221 (solution in the back of the book).

Example (Simple Random Walk on \( \mathbb{Z} \)).  This is null recurrent. If not, then every solution to \( \forall j \, x_j = \sum_i x_i p_{ij} \) satisfies \( \sum_j x_j < \infty \). However, \( x_j \equiv 1 \) is a solution. ...

Example 4.4(a) (The Gambler’s Ruin Problem).  A gambler needs \$N\$ but has only \$i\$ (\( 1 \leq i \leq N - 1 \)). He plays games that give him chance \( p \) of winning \$1\$ and \( q := 1 - p \) of losing \$1\$ each time. When his fortune is either \$N\$ or 0, he stops. What is his chance of success?

Solution. The gambler’s fortune is a Markov chain on \( \{0, 1, \ldots, N\} \). Let \( \alpha_i \) be the probability of success. Then \( \alpha_0 = 0 \), \( \alpha_N = 1 \), and

\[
\text{for } 1 \leq i \leq N - 1 \quad \alpha_i = p \alpha_{i+1} + q \alpha_{i-1},
\]

which gives

\[
\alpha_{i+1} - \alpha_i = \frac{q}{p} (\alpha_i - \alpha_{i-1}).
\]

Therefore

\[
\alpha_{i+1} - \alpha_i = \left( \frac{q}{p} \right)^i (\alpha_1 - \alpha_0) = \left( \frac{q}{p} \right)^i \alpha_1.
\]

To determine \( \alpha_1 \), add these up:

\[
1 = \alpha_N = \sum_{i=0}^{N-1} (\alpha_{i+1} - \alpha_i) = \sum_{i=0}^{N-1} \left( \frac{q}{p} \right)^i \alpha_1,
\]

\[ \alpha_1 = 1 / \sum_{i=0}^{N-1} \left( \frac{q}{p} \right)^i. \]

By adding only the equations for \( \alpha_1 - \alpha_0, \alpha_2 - \alpha_1, \ldots, \alpha_i - \alpha_{i-1} \), we get
\[ \alpha_i = \sum_{j=0}^{i-1} \left( \frac{q}{p} \right)^j / \sum_{j=0}^{N-1} \left( \frac{q}{p} \right)^j. \]

6\textsuperscript{*} For example, when \( p = \frac{1}{2} \), we have \( \alpha_i = i/N \).

For an application to statistics, see Exercise 4.30, p. 224 (with answer in the back).

\section*{§4.5. Branching Processes.}

An individual has \( k \) children with probability \( p_k \), where \( \sum_{k=0}^{\infty} p_k = 1 \). The children reproduce independently according to the same offspring distribution. Let \( Z_n \) be the size of the \( n \)th generation. Clearly \( Z_n \) is a Markov chain, called a \textit{Galton–Watson branching process}. The initial state \( Z_0 \) is usually assumed to be 1.

This was introduced in order to study British family names. It is also of interest in biology, chain reactions, electron multipliers, and analysis of various probabilistic processes. Many, many variations have been (and continue to be) studied.

Let \( L \) be a random variable with \( P[L = k] = p_k \) and let \( \langle L_i^{(n)} ; n, i \geq 1 \rangle \) be independent copies of \( L \), so that \( Z_{n+1} = \sum \limits_{i=1}^{Z_n} L_i^{(n+1)} \). The \textit{probability generating function} (p.g.f.) of \( L \) is
\[ f(s) := E[s^L] = \sum_{k \geq 0} p_k s^k \quad (0 \leq s \leq 1). \]

**Proposition.** The p.g.f. of \( Z_n \) is \( f^{(n)} := f \circ \cdots \circ f \) \( n \) times.

**Proof.** \( E[s^{Z_n}] = E\left[ E[s^{\sum_{i=1}^{Z_{n-1}} L_i^{(n)} } \mid Z_{n-1}] \right] = E\left[ \prod_{i=1}^{Z_{n-1}} E[s^{L_i}] \right] = E[f(s)^{Z_{n-1}}] \). Apply this \( n \) times.

Write \( q := P[Z_n \to 0] = P[\exists n \ Z_n = 0] \).

**Corollary.** \( q = \lim_{n \to \infty} f^{(n)}(0) \).

**Proof.** \( q = \lim_{n} P[Z_n = 0] = \lim_{n} f^{(n)}(0). \)

3\textsuperscript{*} Looking at a graph of \( f \), which is increasing and convex, we see that . . .

**Proposition.** Suppose \( p_1 \neq 1 \). We have \( q = 1 \iff f'(1) \leq 1 \). Also, \( q \) is the smallest root of \( f(s) = s \) in \([0,1]\) — the only other possible root being 1.

Note that \( f'(1) = E[L] =: m \), the mean number of offspring per individual.
4.6. Applications of Markov Chains.


Certain optimization algorithms move from a point to a better point repeatedly until reaching an optimal point. How many steps do they take? We model this very generally and very crudely as follows. There are a known number of points, \( N \), and we start at the worst one. Each step chooses randomly uniformly among the better points, independently of the past points. Thus, we can call the \( j \)th best point state \( j \); then we see a Markov chain on the states \( \{1, 2, \ldots, N\} \) that starts at state \( N \) and ends at state 1. To end at state 1 means that the transition probability from state 1 to state 1 is 1. We will analyze \( T_N \), the number of steps until state 1 is reached. Note that

\[
T_N = \sum_{j=1}^{N-1} I_j,
\]

where \( I_j := \text{indicator of ever being in state } j \).

**Lemma 4.6.1.** \( I_1, \ldots, I_{N-1} \) are independent and \( P[I_j = 1] = 1/j \).

**Proof.** It suffices to show that

\[
P[I_j = 1 \mid I_{j+1}, \ldots, I_{N-1}] = \frac{1}{j}.
\]

This is clear for \( j = N - 1 \). For \( j < N - 1 \), given \( I_{j+1}, \ldots, I_{N-1} \), let \( K := \min\{k > j \mid I_k = 1\} \). Then on the event that \( K = n \), we have

\[
P[I_j = 1 \mid I_{j+1}, \ldots, I_{N-1}] = \frac{1}{j}.
\]

**Proposition 4.6.2.** \( E[T_N] = \sum_{j=1}^{N-1} 1/j \), \( \text{Var}(T_N) = \sum_{j=1}^{N-1} (1/j)(1 - 1/j) \), and

\[
\frac{T_N - \log N}{\sqrt{\log N}} \Rightarrow N(0, 1) \quad \text{as } n \to \infty.
\]

**Proof.** Use Lindeberg’s CLT: since the random variables are bounded, this \ldots requires merely that the variance of the sum tend to infinity.

(Note: the book says that \( T_N \approx \text{Pois}(\log N) \). This is also true. On the other hand, *Probability Models* gives the normal limit!)

The definition of the Markovian property shows that given a finite time \( N \), the sequence

\[ X_N, X_{N-1}, \ldots, X_0 \]

arises from \( N \) steps of a possibly nonhomogeneous Markov chain. Now, the transition probabilities are

\[
P[X_m = j \mid X_{m+1} = i] = \frac{P[X_m = j, X_{m+1} = i]}{P[X_{m+1} = i]} = \frac{P[X_{m+1} = i \mid X_m = j]P[X_m = j]}{P[X_{m+1} = i]}
\]

Therefore, if \( \langle X_n \rangle \) is stationary with stationary probabilities \( P[X_0 = i] = \pi_i \), then the transition probabilities are homogeneous and equal

\[
P[X_m = j \mid X_{m+1} = i] = \frac{\pi_j p_{ji}}{\pi_i} =: p_{ij}^*.
\]

Since \( P[X_k = i] = \pi_i \), this time-reversed chain has the same stationary probabilities. If it happens that \( \forall i, j \ p_{ij}^* = p_{ij} \), then the Markov chain is called reversible. This can be written as

\[
\forall i, j \quad \pi_i p_{ij} = \pi_j p_{ji}.
\]

If the chain is irreducible and \( \exists x_i \geq 0 \) such that \( \sum x_i = 1 \) and \( \forall i, j \ x_i p_{ij} = x_j p_{ji} \), then actually \( x_i = \pi_i \) and so the chain is reversible since

\[
\forall j \quad \sum_i x_i p_{ij} = \sum_i x_j p_{ji} = x_j.
\]

We can also write \( w_{ij} := \pi_i p_{ij} \), so that \( w_{ji} = w_{ij} \) and

\[
\forall i \quad \sum_j w_{ij} = \sum_j \pi_i p_{ij} = \pi_i,
\]

whence \( p_{ij} = w_{ij} / \sum_k w_{ik} \). Conversely, if \( \exists w_{ij} = w_{ji} \geq 0 \) with \( 0 < w := \sum_{i,j} w_{ij} < \infty \) and \( p_{ij} = w_{ij} / \sum_k w_{ik} \), then set \( w_i := \sum_k w_{ik} \) and

\[
\pi_i := \frac{w_i}{\sum \ell w_\ell} = \frac{w_i}{w}.
\]

We have

\[
\pi_i p_{ij} = \frac{w_i}{w} \cdot \frac{w_{ij}}{w_i} = \frac{w_{ij}}{w} = \frac{w_{ji}}{w} = \pi_j p_{ji},
\]

so the chain is reversible with these stationary probabilities.

\( \text{Note that this is the same as a random walk on a graph with weighted edges. . . .} \)
To find a condition for reversibility not requiring finding numbers \( x_i \) or \( w_{ij} \), consider

\[
\frac{p_{ij}}{p_{ji}} = \frac{\pi_j}{\pi_i}.
\]

This means that around any cycle \( i_0, i_1, \ldots, i_n, i_{n+1} = i_0 \) where the successive transitions have positive probability, we have

\[
\prod_{j=0}^{n} \frac{p_{i_j,i_{j+1}}}{p_{i_{j+1},i_j}} = \prod_{j=0}^{n} \frac{\pi_{i_{j+1}}}{\pi_{i_j}} = 1.
\]

Conversely, if this holds and the chain is irreducible, then we may define numbers \( x_\ell \) by making \( x_0 > 0 \) arbitrary and setting

\[
x_\ell := x_0 \prod_{j=0}^{k-1} \frac{p_{i_j,i_{j+1}}}{p_{i_{j+1},i_j}}
\]

for any path \( 0 = i_0, i_1, \ldots, i_k = \ell \) since any two paths give the same value. \( \ldots \) This implies

1) that \( x_ip_{ij} = x_jp_{ji}, \ldots \) so \( x_j = \sum_i x_jp_{ji} = \sum_i x_ip_{ij} \). By our version of Theorem 4.3.3, if the chain is positive recurrent, this means \( \sum x_j < \infty \) and \( x_j = \pi_j \sum_i x_i \), so \( \pi_ip_{ij} = \pi_jp_{ji} \). Thus, we have proved

**Theorem 4.7.1.** An irreducible stationary Markov chain is reversible iff for any cycle \( i_0, i_1, \ldots, i_n, i_{n+1} = i_0 \) where the successive transitions have positive probability, we have

\[
\prod_{j=0}^{n} \frac{p_{i_j,i_{j+1}}}{p_{i_{j+1},i_j}} = 1. \tag{N4}
\]

In fact, we extend the notion of reversibility beyond positive recurrent chains to include all those Markov chains for which \( \exists x_i > 0 \ \forall i,j \ x_ip_{ij} = x_jp_{ji}. \) We still have \( p_{ij} = w_{ij}/x_i \) if \( w_{ij} := x_ip_{ij} = w_{ji}, \) but it may be that \( \sum x_i = +\infty \). Likewise, if \( w_{ij} = w_{ji} \) are given with \( \forall i \ x_i := \sum_j w_{ij} < \infty \) and \( p_{ij} = w_{ij}/x_i \), then the chain is reversible. **Theorem 4.7.1** extends to say that any irreducible Markov chain is reversible iff \( (N4) \) holds for all cycles. Furthermore, the chain has a stationary probability distribution iff \( \sum x_i < \infty \) (i.e., the sum of the weights is finite) by **Theorem 4.3.3. \( \ldots \)**

**Example 4.7(a).** Any nearest-neighbor random walk on \( \mathbb{Z} \) or on a tree is reversible.

**Example:** Simple random walk on any graph, such as the lattice \( \mathbb{Z}^d \), is reversible. If the graph is infinite, then simple random walk is not positive recurrent.
Suppose we toss a fair coin repeatedly. What is the expected number of tosses until the numbers of heads and tails are equal?

We will later study reversibility in continuous time and see that certain diffusions, including Brownian motion, are reversible.

We now show that electrical networks are intimately connected to reversible Markov chains. The states $i$ will now be vertices $x$ and the weights $w_{ij}$ of edges will now be conductances $C_{xy}$. Let $G$ be a finite connected graph, $x$ a vertex of $G$, and $A$, $Z$ disjoint subsets of vertices of $G$. Let $T_A$ be the first time that the random walk visits (“hits”) some vertex in $A$; if the random walk happens to start in $A$, then this is 0. Occasionally, we will use $T_A^+$, which is the first time after 0 that the walk visits $A$; this is different from $T_A$ only when the walk starts in $A$. Usually $A$ and $Z$ will be singletons. Often, all the edge weights are equal; we call this case simple random walk.

Consider the probability that the random walk visits $A$ before it visits $Z$ as a function of its starting point $x$: 

$$F(x) := P_x[T_A < T_Z].$$

We use $|$ to denote the restriction of a function to a set. Then clearly $F|A \equiv 1$, $F|Z \equiv 0$, and for $x \notin A \cup Z$,

$$F(x) = \sum_y P_x[\text{first step is to } y] P_x[T_A < T_Z \mid \text{first step is to } y] = \sum_{x \sim y} p_{xy} F(y) = \frac{1}{C_x} \sum_{x \sim y} C_{x,y} F(y),$$

where $x \sim y$ indicates that $x$, $y$ are adjacent in $G$. In the special case of simple random walk, this equation becomes

$$F(x) = \frac{1}{\deg x} \sum_{x \sim y} F(y),$$

where $\deg x$ is the degree of $x$, i.e., the number of edges incident to $x$. That is, $F(x)$ is the average of the values of $F$ at the neighbors of $x$. In general, this is still true, but the average is taken with weights. We say that $F$ is harmonic at such a point. Now harmonic functions satisfy a maximum principle: For $H \subseteq G$, write $\overline{H}$ for the set of vertices that are either in $H$ or are adjacent to some vertex in $H$. When we say that a function is defined on a graph, we mean that it is defined on its vertex set.
Maximum Principle. If $H \subseteq G$, $H$ is connected, $f: G \to \mathbb{R}$, $f$ is harmonic on $H$, and $\max f|_H = \max f$, then $f|_{\overline{H}} \equiv \max f$.

Proof. Let $K := \{ y \in \overline{H} : f(y) = \max f \}$. Note that if $x \in H$, $x \sim y$, and $f(x) = \max f$, then $f(y) = \max f$ by harmonicity of $f$ at $x$. Thus, $K \cap H = K$. Since $H$ is connected, it follows that $K = \overline{H}$.

This leads to the Uniqueness Principle. If $H \varsubsetneq G$, $f, g: G \to \mathbb{R}$, $f, g$ are harmonic on $H$, and $f|((G \setminus H)) = g|((G \setminus H))$, then $f = g$.

Proof. Let $h := f - g$. We claim that $h \leq 0$. This suffices to establish the corollary since then $h \geq 0$ by symmetry, whence $h = 0$.

Now $h = 0$ off $H$, so if $h \not\leq 0$ on $H$, then $h$ is positive somewhere on $H$, whence $\max h|_H = \max h$. Therefore, according to the maximum principle, $h$ is a positive constant on the closure of some component $K$ of $H$. In particular, $h > 0$ on the non-empty set $\overline{K} \setminus K$. However, $\overline{K} \setminus K \subseteq G \setminus H$, whence $h = 0$ on $\overline{K} \setminus K$. This is a contradiction.

Thus, the harmonicity of the function $x \mapsto P_x[T_A < T_Z]$ (together with its values where it is not harmonic) characterizes it.

Existence Principle. If $H \varsubsetneq G$ and $f_0 : G \setminus H \to \mathbb{R}$, then $\exists f : G \to \mathbb{R}$ such that $f|((G \setminus H)) = f_0|((G \setminus H))$ and $f$ is harmonic on $H$.

Proof. Let $X$ be the first vertex in $G \setminus H$ visited by the corresponding random walk. Set $f(x) := E_x[f_0(X)]$.

This is the solution to the so-called Dirichlet problem. The function $F$ of (N5) is the particular case $H = G \setminus (A \cup Z)$, $f_0|A \equiv 1$, and $f_0|Z \equiv 0$.

In fact, we could have immediately deduced existence from uniqueness or vice versa: The Dirichlet problem on a finite graph consists of a finite number of linear equations, one for each vertex in $H$. Since the number of unknowns is equal to the number of equations, we get the equivalence of uniqueness and existence.

In order to study the solution to the Dirichlet problem, especially for a sequence of subgraphs of an infinite graph, we will discover that electrical networks are useful. Electrical networks, of course, have a physical meaning whose intuition is useful to us, but also they can be used as a rigorous mathematical tool.

Mathematically, an electrical network is just a weighted graph. But now we call the weights of the edges conductances and write them as $C_{xy}$; their reciprocals are called resistances, written $R_{xy}$. We hook up a battery or batteries (this is just intuition)
between $A$ and $Z$ so that the **voltage** (or **potential**) at every vertex in $A$ is 1 and in $Z$ is 0 (more generally, so that the voltages on $G \setminus H$ are given by $f_0$). **Voltages** $V$ are then established at every vertex and **current** $I$ runs through the edges. These functions are implicitly defined and uniquely determined, as we will see, by two “laws”:

**Ohm’s Law**: If $x \sim y$, the current flowing from $x$ to $y$ satisfies $(V_x - V_y) = I_{xy} R_{xy}$.

**Kirchhoff’s Node Law**: The sum of all currents flowing out of a given vertex is 0, provided the vertex is not connected to a battery.

Physically, Ohm’s law, which is usually stated as $V = IR$ in engineering, is an empirical statement about linear response to voltage differences — certain components obey this law over a large range of voltage differences. Kirchhoff’s node law expresses the fact that charge does not build up at a node (current being charge per unit time). If we add wires corresponding to the batteries, then the proviso in Kirchhoff’s node law is unnecessary.

Mathematically, we’ll take Ohm’s law to be the definition of current in terms of voltage. In particular, $I_{xy} = -I_{yx}$. Then Kirchhoff’s node law presents a constraint on what kind of function $V$ can be. Indeed, it determines $V$ uniquely: Current flows into $G$ at $A$ and out at $Z$. Thus, we may combine the two laws on $G \setminus (A \cup Z)$ to obtain

$$\forall x \notin A \cup Z \quad 0 = \sum_{x \sim y} I_{xy} = \sum_{x \sim y} (V_x - V_y) C_{xy},$$

or

$$V_x = \frac{1}{C_x} \sum_{x \sim y} C_{xy} V_y,$$

where

$$C_x := \sum_{y \sim x} C_{xy}.\)$$

That is, $V_\bullet$ is harmonic on $G \setminus (A \cup Z)$. Since $V|A \equiv 1$ and $V|Z \equiv 0$, it follows that $V = F$; in particular, we have uniqueness and existence of voltages. The voltage function is just the solution to the Dirichlet problem.

Suppose that $A = \{a\}$ is a singleton. What is the chance that a random walk starting at $a$ will hit $Z$ before it returns to $a$? Write this as

$$P[a \to Z] := P_a[T_Z < T_{\{a\}}^+].$$
Impose a voltage of $V_a$ at $a$ and 0 on $Z$. Since $V_*$ is linear in $V_a$, we have that $P_x[T_{\{a\}} < T_Z] = V_x/V_a$, whence

$$P[a \to Z] = \sum_x p_{ax} \left( 1 - P_x[T_{\{a\}} < T_Z] \right) = \sum_x \frac{C_{ax}}{C_a} \left( 1 - V_x/V_a \right)$$

$$= \frac{1}{V_a C_a} \sum_x C_{ax} (V_a - V_x) = \frac{1}{V_a C_a} \sum_x I_{ax}.$$ 

In other words,

$$V_a = \frac{\sum_x I_{ax}}{C_a P[a \to Z]}.$$ 

Since $\sum_x I_{ax}$ is the total amount of current flowing into the circuit at $a$, we may regard the entire circuit between $a$ and $Z$ as a single conductor of net, or \textit{effective, conductance}

$$C_{\text{eff}} := C_a P[a \to Z] := \mathcal{C}(a \leftrightarrow Z), \quad (N6)$$

where the last notation indicates the dependence on $a$ and $Z$. We define the \textbf{effective resistance} $\mathcal{R}(a \leftrightarrow Z)$ to be its reciprocal. One answer to our question above is thus $P[a \to Z] = \mathcal{C}(a \leftrightarrow Z)/C_a$. Later, we will see some ways to compute effective conductance.

Now the number of visits to $a$ before hitting $Z$ is a geometric random variable with mean $P[a \to Z]^{-1} = C_a \mathcal{R}(a \leftrightarrow Z)$. This generalizes as follows. Let $G(a, x)$ be the expected number of visits to $x$ strictly before hitting $Z$ by a random walk started at $a$. Thus, $G(a, a) = C_a \mathcal{R}(a \leftrightarrow Z)$ and $G(a, x) = 0$ for $x \in Z$. The function $G(\cdot, \cdot)$ is the \textbf{Green function} for the random walk absorbed on $Z$.

\textbf{Theorem (Green Function = Voltage).} \textit{When a voltage is imposed so that a unit current flows from $a$ to $Z$, then $V_x = G(a, x)/C_x$ for all $x$.}

\textit{Proof.} We have just shown that this is true for $x \in \{a\} \cup Z$, so it suffices to establish that $G(a, x)/C_x$ is harmonic elsewhere. But by Exercise 60, we have that $G(a, x)/C_x = G(x, a)/C_a$ and the harmonicity of $G(x, a)$ is established just as for the function of $(N5)$.

Given that we have two probabilistic interpretations of voltage, we naturally wonder whether current has a probabilistic interpretation. We might guess one by the following unrealistic but simple model of electricity: positive particles enter the circuit at $a$, they do Brownian motion on $G$ (taking longer to pass through small conductors) and, when they hit $Z$, they are removed. The net flow of particles across an edge would then be the current on that edge. It turns out that in our mathematical model, this is correct:
Proposition (Interpretation of Current). Start a random walk at \( a \) and absorb it when it first visits \( Z \). For \( x \sim y \), let \( S_{xy} \) be the number of transitions from \( x \) to \( y \). Then \( E[S_{xy}] = G(a, x)p_{xy} \) and \( E[S_{xy} - S_{yx}] = I_{xy} \), where \( I \) is the current in \( G \) when a potential is applied between \( a \) and \( Z \) in such a way that unit current flows in at \( a \).

Note that we count a transition from \( y \) to \( x \) when \( y \notin Z \) but \( x \in Z \), although we do not count this as a visit to \( x \) in computing \( G(a, x) \).

Proof. We have

\[
E[S_{xy}] = E \left[ \sum_{k=0}^{\infty} 1_{[X_k = x]} 1_{[X_{k+1} = y]} \right] = \sum_{k=0}^{\infty} P[X_k = x, X_{k+1} = y]
\]

\[
= \sum_{k=0}^{\infty} P[X_k = x] p_{xy} = E \left[ \sum_{k=0}^{\infty} 1_{[X_k = x]} \right] p_{xy} = G(a, x)p_{xy}.
\]

Hence by the preceding theorem, we have \( \forall x, y \),

\[
E[S_{xy} - S_{yx}] = G(a, x)p_{xy} - G(a, y)p_{yx} = \left( \frac{G(a, x)}{C_x} - \frac{G(a, y)}{C_y} \right) C_{xy} = (V_x - V_y)C_{xy} = I_{xy}.
\]

Effective conductance is a key quantity because of the following relationship to the question of transience and recurrence when \( G \) is infinite. For an infinite graph \( G \), we assume that there are only a finite number of edges incident to each vertex. But we allow more than one edge between a given pair of vertices: each such edge has its own conductance. Loops are also allowed (edges with only one endpoint), but these may be ignored since they only delay the random walk. Strictly speaking, then, \( G \) may be a multigraph, not a graph. However, we will ignore this distinction.

Let \( \langle G_n \rangle \) be any sequence of finite subgraphs of \( G \) that exhaust \( G \), i.e., \( G_n \subseteq G_{n+1} \) and \( G = \bigcup G_n \). Let \( Z_n \) be the set of vertices in \( G \setminus G_n \). (Note that if \( Z_n \) is contracted to a point, the graph will have finitely many vertices but may have infinitely many edges.) Then for any \( a \in G \), the limit \( \lim_{n \to \infty} P[a \to Z_n] \) is the probability of never returning to \( a \) in \( G \) — the escape probability from \( a \). This is positive iff the random walk on \( G \) is transient. By (N6), \( \lim_{n \to \infty} C(a \leftrightarrow Z_n) \) has the same property. We call \( \lim_{n \to \infty} C(a \leftrightarrow Z_n) \) the effective conductance from \( a \) to \( \infty \) in \( G \) and denote it by \( C(a \leftrightarrow \infty) \) or, if \( a \) is understood, by \( C_{\text{eff}} \). Its reciprocal, effective resistance, is denoted \( R_{\text{eff}} \). We have shown:
Theorem (Transience Equivalent to Finite Effective Conductance). Random walk on a connected network is transient iff the effective conductance from any of its vertices to infinity is positive.

How do we calculate effective conductance of a network? Since we want to replace a network by an equivalent single conductor, it is natural to attempt this by replacing more and more of $G$ through simple transformations. There are, in fact, three such simple transformations, series, parallel, and star-triangle, and it turns out that they suffice to reduce all finite planar networks by a theorem of Epifanov.

I. Series. Two resistors $R_1$ and $R_2$ in series are equivalent to a single resistor $R_1 + R_2$. In other words, if $v \in G \setminus (A \cup Z)$ is a node of degree 2 with neighbors $u_1, u_2$ and we replace the edges $(u_i, v)$ by a single edge $(u_1, u_2)$ having resistance $R_{u_1v} + R_{vu_2}$, then all potentials and currents in $G \setminus \{v\}$ are unchanged and the current that flows from $u_1$ to $u_2$ equals $I_{u_1v}$.

Proof. It suffices to check that Ohm’s and Kirchhoff’s laws are satisfied on the new network for the voltages and currents given. This is easy. \hfill \Box

II. Parallel. Two conductors $C_1$ and $C_2$ in parallel are equivalent to one conductor $C_1 + C_2$. In other words, if two edges $e_1$ and $e_2$ that both join vertices $v_1, v_2 \in G$ are replaced by a single edge $e$ joining $v_1, v_2$ of conductance $C_e := C_{e_1} + C_{e_2}$, then all voltages and currents in $G \setminus \{e_1, e_2\}$ are unchanged and the current $I_e$ equals $I_{e_1} + I_{e_2}$. The same is true for an infinite number of edges in parallel.
Proof. Check Ohm’s and Kirchhoff’s laws with \( I_i := I_{e_1} + I_{e_2} \).

Example (Gambler’s Ruin). Consider simple random walk on \( \mathbb{Z} \). Let \( 0 \leq k \leq n \). What is \( P_k[T_0 < T_n] \)? It is the voltage at \( k \) when there is a unit voltage imposed at 0 with 0 voltage at \( n \). If we replace the resistors in series from 0 to \( k \) by a single resistor with resistance \( k \) and the resistors from \( k \) to \( n \) by a single resistor of resistance \( n - k \), then the voltage at \( k \) does not change. But now this voltage is simply the probability of taking a step to 0, which is thus \( (n - k)/n \).

Example: Suppose that each edge in the following network has equal conductance. What is \( P[a \to z] \)? Following the transformations indicated in the figure, we obtain \( C(a \leftrightarrow z) = 7/12 \), so that

\[
P[a \to z] = \frac{C(a \leftrightarrow z)}{C_a} = \frac{7/12}{3} = \frac{7}{36}.
\]
Example: What is \( P[a \rightarrow z] \) in the following network?

There are 2 ways to deal with the vertical edge:

(1) Remove it: by symmetry, the voltages at its endpoints are equal, whence no current flows on it.

(2) Contract it, i.e., remove it but combine its endpoints into one vertex (we could also combine the other two unlabelled vertices with each other): the voltages are the same, so they may be combined.

In either case, we get \( C(a \leftrightarrow z) = \frac{2}{3} \), whence \( P[a \rightarrow z] = \frac{1}{3} \).

III. Star-triangle. The configurations below are equivalent when

\[
\forall i \in \{1, 2, 3\} \quad C_{uv_i} C_{v_{i-1}v_{i+1}} = \gamma,
\]

where indices are taken \( \mod 3 \) and

\[
\gamma := \frac{\prod_i C_{uv_i}}{\sum_i C_{uv_i}} = \frac{\sum_i R_{v_{i-1}v_{i+1}}}{\prod_i R_{v_{i-1}v_{i+1}}}
\]

We won’t prove this equivalence.

Actually, there is a fourth trivial transformation: we may prune (or add) vertices of degree 1 (and attendant edges) as well as loops.

Either of the transformations star-triangle or triangle-star can also be used to reduce the network in the preceding example.

Example: What is \( P_x[\tau_a < \tau_z] \) in the following network?
Following the transformations indicated in the figure, we obtain

\[ P_x[\tau_a < \tau_z] = \frac{10/33}{10/33 + 15/22} = \frac{4}{13}. \]

**Theorem.** For any positive recurrent Markov chain and any states \( a \neq z \),

\[ E_a[\text{time to first return to } a \text{ that occurs after } T_z] = E_a T_z + E_z T_a = \frac{1}{\pi_a P_a[T_z < T_a^+]]. \]

If the chain is reversible, this equals \( 2\gamma/C(a \leftrightarrow z) \text{ where } \gamma = \sum_{x \sim y} C_{xy} \).

**Proof.** \( P_a[T_z < T_a^+] \) = rate of commutes to \( z \) among excursions from \( a \)

\[ = \frac{\text{rate of commutes to } z \text{ among steps}}{\text{rate of excursions from } a \text{ among steps}} = \frac{1/\text{expected commute time}}{\pi_a}. \]

In the reversible case, use (N6) and the fact that \( \pi_a = C_a/(2\gamma) \).

Another important concept concerns energy, but we omit it in favor of simply reciting some of its consequences.

**Rayleigh’s Monotonicity Law.** If \( C \) and \( C' \) are two assignments of conductances on the same graph and \( C \leq C' \) on each edge, then \( C(a \leftrightarrow Z) \leq C'(a \leftrightarrow Z) \) for any \( a, Z \).

**Corollary.** If \( C \asymp C' \) (i.e., \( \exists k_1, k_2 \ k_1 C \leq C' \leq k_2 C \) on each edge), then the corresponding random walks are both transient or both recurrent.

To generalize this, given two networks \( G, G' \) with conductance \( C, C' \), call a map \( \phi \) from the vertices of \( G \) to those of \( G' \text{ bounded} \) if \( \exists k < \infty \ \exists \text{ map } \Phi \) on edges of \( G \) such that
(i) ∀ edge \((v, w) \in G\), \(\Phi(v, w)\) is a path of edges joining \(\phi(v)\) and \(\phi(w)\) with

\[
\sum_{e' \in \Phi(v, w)} C'(e')^{-1} \leq kC(v, w)^{-1}; \quad \text{and}
\]

(ii) ∀ edge \(e' \in G'\), there are \(\leq k\) edges in \(G\) whose image under \(\Phi\) contains \(e'\).

[Think of resistances as lengths of edges.]

**Example:** \(G \leq G'\), \(\phi =\) inclusion, \(C \leq kC'\). We call two networks **roughly equivalent** if there are bounded maps in both directions.

**Theorem (Kanai).** Two roughly equivalent networks are both transient or both recurrent. In fact, if there is a bounded map from \(G\) to \(G'\) and \(G\) is transient, then \(G'\) is transient.

*New proof of Pólya’s Theorem in \(\mathbb{Z}^2\).* In \(\mathbb{Z}^2\), short together all \((x, y)\) with constant \(|x| \lor |y|\). This is recurrent since \(\sum \frac{1}{n} =\infty\).

Give idea for \(\mathbb{Z}^3\). Talk about continuous case (spherical symmetry helps). Give spherically symmetric tree examples.
Chapter 5

Continuous-Time Markov Chains

We will do only §§2–4.

§5.2. Continuous-Time Markov Chains.

This section consists of definitions.

A stochastic process with time being an interval in \( \mathbb{R} \) is called \textit{Markov} if the future and past are independent given the present: \( \forall t \ [X(s); \ s > t] \) and \( [X(s); \ s < t] \) are independent given \( X(t) \). If the number of states is countable, the process is called a \textit{chain}. We then identify the states with \( \mathbb{N} \). We will deal only with Markov chains that do not have instantaneous states and are right continuous, i.e., with probability 1 \( \forall i \in \mathbb{N} \ \forall t \ X(t) = i \Rightarrow \exists \varepsilon > 0 \ \forall s \in (0, \varepsilon) \ X(t+s) = i \). We also assume homogeneous transition probabilities \( p_{ij}(s) := P[X(t+s) = j \mid X(t) = i] \).

By the Markov property, the time spent in each state is a memoryless random variable, hence is an exponential random variable; call the rate \( \nu_i \) when in state \( i \). Let the probability distribution of the next state visited be \( P_{ij} \); the next state is independent of the time spent in \( i \) by the Markov property again. This gives a constructive view of a continuous time Markov chain: use a timer at each state; when it rings, move according to a discrete-time Markov chain. However, there is a difficulty: what if we make an infinite number of transitions in a finite time period? Example: \( P_{i,i+1} = 1, \nu_i = i^2 \). If \( \tau_i \) is the time spent in \( i \), then

\[
E[\tau_i] = \frac{1}{\nu_i^2} \quad \text{so} \quad E\left[\sum \tau_i\right] < \infty,
\]

so \( \sum \tau_i < \infty \) a.s. The paradox of Lincoln’s penny. We will not treat such chains, only \textit{regular} ones, i.e., ones defined on \([0, \infty)\) that with probability 1 make only a finite number of transitions in \([0, N)\) for every \( N < \infty \).

Another construction of continuous-time Markov chains is as follows. Let \( q_{ij} := \nu_i P_{ij} \) for \( i \neq j \). This is the \textit{transition rate} from \( i \) to \( j \). We could have at state \( i \) timers \ldots with rates \( q_{ij} \); the first to ring determines the next state: from Problem 1.34, p. 53, the probability of being the first to ring is proportional to the rate. \ldots
5.3. Birth and Death Processes.

In case $P_{ij} = 0$ for $|i - j| > 1$, the chain is called a *birth and death process*. We think of the state as representing the size of a population. Let the *birth rates* be $\lambda_i := q_{i,i+1}$ and the *death rates* be $\mu_i := q_{i,i-1}$.

If there are no deaths, the process is called a *pure birth process*. The Poisson process, $\lambda_n = \lambda$ for $n \geq 0$, is such a process. Another is the *Yule process*, where $\lambda_n = n\lambda$ for $n \geq 0$.

![A sample of a Yule process.](image)

![A sample of 300 scaled Yule processes, dividing by $e^t$.](image)
The Yule process is regular: as shown on p. 235 of the book, if \( \tau_i \) denotes the time spent in state \( i \), then for every \( k \geq 1 \) and \( t \in (0, \infty) \), we have (if the chain starts in state 1)

\[
P\left[ \sum_{i=1}^{k} \tau_i \leq t \right] = \left( 1 - e^{-\lambda t} \right)^k,
\]

whence \( P\left[ \sum_{i=1}^{\infty} \tau_i \leq t \right] = 0 \). ...  

Another way to see this result, which says that \( P\left[ X(t) > k \right] = (1 - e^{-\lambda t})^k \), or that \( X(t) \sim \text{Geom}(e^{-\lambda t}) \), is the following. The time \( \tau_i \sim \text{Exp}(\lambda i) \), which is also the distribution of the minimum of \( i \) independent \( \text{Exp}(\lambda) \) random variables. Thus, \( \sum_{i=1}^{k} \tau_i \) has the same distribution as \( \max_{1 \leq i \leq k} Z_i \), where \( Z_i \sim \text{Exp}(\lambda) \) are independent: \( \tau_k \) has the same distribution as \( \min_{1 \leq i \leq k} Z_i \), then \( \tau_{k-1} \) the same as the minimum of the time from the minimum of \( Z_i \) to the next smallest, etc. But the cdf of \( \max_{1 \leq i \leq k} Z_i \) is easy to calculate.

**Example 5.3(a).**

(i) Let \( X(t) \) be the number of people in the system of an M/M/s queue, where arrivals have rate \( \lambda \) and service has rate \( \mu \). Then \( \lambda_n = \lambda \) for \( n \geq 0 \), \( \mu_n = n\mu \) for \( 1 \leq n \leq s \), and \( \mu_n = s\mu \) for \( n > s \).

(ii) A linear growth process with immigration assumes that each individual in the population gives birth at exponential rate \( \lambda \) and dies at rate \( \mu \), while there is also immigration at rate \( \theta \). Thus \( \lambda_n = n\lambda + \theta \) for \( n \geq 0 \) and \( \mu_n = n\mu \) for \( n \geq 1 \). This can be shown to be regular by a more general method than the one we used for a Yule process. Namely, note that \( M_n := E\left[ \sum_{i=1}^{n} \tau_i \right] \rightarrow \infty \) as \( n \rightarrow \infty \) and show that

\[
P\left[ M_n^{-1} \sum_{i=1}^{n} \tau_i \to 1 \right] = 1 \]

by calculating the variance of \( \sum_{i=1}^{n} \tau_i \). ...
§5.4. The Kolmogorov Differential Equations.

A pure birth process is the easiest to analyze, since it can always be reduced to a sum of independent (though not necessarily identically distributed) exponential random variables. ... For other processes, we require new tools.

Recall that \( p_{ij}(t) = P[X(s + t) = j \mid X(s) = i] \). There are two sets of differential equations that these functions satisfy, obtained by conditioning on intermediate states.

**Theorem 5.4.3 (Kolmogorov’s Backward Equations).** \( \forall i, j, t \)

\[
p'_{ij}(t) = \sum_{k \neq i} q_{ik} p_{kj}(t) - \nu_i p_{ij}(t).
\]

This can be written with matrices as

\[
P'(t) = QP(t),
\]

where \( P(t) := (p_{ij}(t))_{i,j} \), \( Q := (q_{ij})_{i,j} \), and

\[
q_{ii} := -\nu_i = \text{the negative of the rate of transition out of } i.
\]

**Proof.** First we write an integral equation for \( p_{ij}(t) \). Either the chain has jumped by time \( t \) or not; if it has, then its first jump is to some state \( k \neq i \), from which it eventually reaches state \( j \). Let \( \tau \) be the time of the first jump. Thus, we have

\[
p_{ij}(t) = E_i[P_i[X(t) = j \mid \tau]] = E_i[\delta_{ij}1_{\{\tau > t\}} + P_i[X(t) = j \mid \tau]1_{\{\tau \leq t\}}]
\]

\[
= \delta_{ij}e^{-\nu_i t} + E_i\left[\sum_{k \neq i} P_{ik}p_{kj}(t - \tau)1_{\{\tau \leq t\}}\right]
\]

\[
= \delta_{ij}e^{-\nu_i t} + \int_0^t \sum_{k \neq i} P_{ik}p_{kj}(t - s)\nu_i e^{-\nu_is} ds
\]

\[
= \delta_{ij}e^{-\nu_i t} + \int_0^t \sum_{k \neq i} q_{ik}p_{kj}(u)e^{-\nu_i(u-t)} du
\]

\[
= e^{-\nu_i t}H_{ij}(t),
\]

where

\[
H_{ij}(t) := \delta_{ij} + \int_0^t \sum_{k \neq i} q_{ik}p_{kj}(u)e^{\nu_i(u-t)} du.
\]

Observe that the integrand is bounded by \( \nu_i e^{\nu_i t} \). ... Therefore \( H_{ij}(\cdot) \) is continuous, and thus so is \( p_{ij}(\cdot) \). But this means that the integrand is continuous by the LDCT for series, ... whence \( H_{ij}(\cdot) \) and \( p_{ij}(\cdot) \) are differentiable and we can apply the Fundamental Theorem of Calculus to derive

\[
p'_{ij}(t) = -\nu_i p_{ij}(t) + e^{-\nu_i t} \sum_{k \neq i} q_{ik}p_{kj}(t)e^{\nu_i t},
\]

as desired.
If we use $t := 0$, then we get that $p'_{ij}(0) = q_{ij}$.

The name “backward equations” arises because we conditioned all the way back to the time of the first jump. The forward equations come from a more natural conditioning, yet are more difficult to establish—indeed, they do not always hold. The forward equations arise as follows. Since

$$p_{ij}(t + h) = \sum_k p_{ik}(t)p_{kj}(h) \quad (h > 0),$$

we have

$$\frac{p_{ij}(t + h) - p_{ij}(t)}{h} = \sum_{k \neq j} p_{ik}(t)\frac{p_{kj}(h)}{h} - p_{ij}(t)\frac{1 - p_{jj}(h)}{h}.$$  

If we could interchange $\lim_{h \to 0^+}$ with $\sum_{k \neq j}$, e.g., if there are only finitely many states, then we would get

$$p'_{ij}(t) = \sum_{k \neq j} p_{ik}(t)q_{kj} - p_{ij}(t)\nu_j,$$

or

$$P'(t) = P(t)Q$$

in matrix notation. (Note that the continuity of $p_{ik}(\cdot)$ allows a similar argument for the left-hand derivative.)

**Example 5.4(a) (The Two-State Chain).** Let $q_{01} = \lambda$ and $q_{10} = \mu$. Then $\nu_0 = \lambda$, $\nu_1 = \mu$, and

$$Q = \begin{pmatrix} -\lambda & \lambda \\ \mu & -\mu \end{pmatrix}.$$  

Since the matrices are finite, the solution to $P'(t) = QP(t)$ is

$$P(t) = e^{Qt} \quad \text{(the multiplicative constant = 1 since } P(0) = I).$$

This is intuitive from the following calculation:

$$P(t) = P(t/n)^n = (I + [P(t/n) - I])^n = (I + Qt/n + o(1/n))^n = e^{Qt}.$$  

Exponentiation is calculated via diagonalization: If $Q = ADA^{-1}$, then

$$e^{Qt} = Ae^{Dt}A^{-1}.$$
Here, it is easily calculated that the eigenvalues of $Q$ are 0 and $-(\lambda + \mu)$, with corresponding eigenvectors $(\begin{pmatrix} 1 \\ 1 \end{pmatrix})$ and $(\begin{pmatrix} \lambda \\ -\mu \end{pmatrix})$. Thus, we use

\[ D := \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 0 \\ 0 & -(\lambda + \mu) \end{pmatrix}, \quad A := \begin{pmatrix} 1 & \lambda \\ 1 & -\mu \end{pmatrix}, \quad A^{-1} = \frac{1}{\lambda + \mu} \begin{pmatrix} \mu & \lambda \\ 1 & -1 \end{pmatrix}, \]

so

\[ e^{Qt} = \frac{1}{\lambda + \mu} \begin{pmatrix} 1 & \lambda \\ 1 & -\mu \end{pmatrix} \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 0 \\ 0 & e^{-(\lambda + \mu)t} \end{pmatrix} \begin{pmatrix} \mu & \lambda \\ 1 & -1 \end{pmatrix} \]

\[ = \frac{1}{\lambda + \mu} \begin{pmatrix} \mu + \lambda e^{-(\lambda + \mu)t} & \lambda - \lambda e^{-(\lambda + \mu)t} \\ \mu - \mu e^{-(\lambda + \mu)t} & \lambda + \mu e^{-(\lambda + \mu)t} \end{pmatrix}. \]

E.g., $p_{00}(t) = (\mu + \lambda e^{-(\lambda + \mu)t})/ (\lambda + \mu)$. 
Chapter 6

Martingales

§6.1. Martingales.

Recall

**Theorem 3.3.2 (Wald’s Equation).** Let $X_n$ be random variables all with the same mean $\mu$. Suppose that $N$ is an $\mathbb{N}$-valued random variable such that $\forall n \geq 0 \ \forall i \geq 1 \ [N = n]$ is independent of $X_{n+i}$. If either

(a) all $X_n \geq 0$ or
(b) $E[N] < \infty$ and $\sup_n E|X_n| < \infty$,

then

$$E\left[\sum_{n=1}^{N} X_n\right] = \mu \cdot E[N].$$

A modification of Wald’s Equation is:

**Theorem (Extension of Wald’s Equation).** Let $X_n$ be random variables for $n \geq 1$, $N$ an $\mathbb{N}$-valued random variable, $\mu \in \mathbb{R}$,

(i) $\forall n \ E[X_n] = \mu = E[X_n \mid N < n]$, and

(ii) either

(a) $X_n \geq 0$ or

(b) $E\left[\left|\sum_{n=1}^{N} X_n\right|\right] < \infty$ and $\lim_{n \to \infty} E\left[\sum_{k=1}^{n} X_k \mathbf{1}_{[N > n]}\right] = 0$.

Then

$$E\left[\sum_{n=1}^{N} X_n\right] = \begin{cases} \mu E[N] & \text{if } \mu \neq 0, \\ 0 & \text{if } \mu = 0. \end{cases}$$

**Proof.** The case (ii)(a) is as before, since it implies that $\mu = E[X_n \mid N \geq n]$; but we won’t use it, so assume (ii)(b). Write $Z_n := \sum_{k=1}^{n} X_k$. By the first part of (ii)(b) and the LDCT, $E[Z_N] = \lim_{n \to \infty} E[Z_N \mathbf{1}_{[N \leq n]}]$. Now

$$E\left[Z_N \mathbf{1}_{[N \leq n]}\right] = E\left[\sum_{k=1}^{n} X_k \mathbf{1}_{[k \leq N \leq n]}\right] = \sum_{k=1}^{n} E\left[X_k (\mathbf{1} - \mathbf{1}_{[N < k]} - \mathbf{1}_{[N > n]})\right],$$
which, by (i),
\[
\sum_{k=1}^{n} \{ \mu - \mu P[N < k] - E[X_k 1_{[N>n]}] \} = \mu \sum_{k=1}^{n} P[N \geq k] - E[Z_n 1_{[N>n]}].
\]

Consider separately the cases \( \mu = 0 \) and \( \mu \neq 0 \) and apply the second part of (ii)(b).

\textbf{Definition.} We call \( \langle Z_n ; n \geq 0 \rangle \) a \textit{martingale} if
\begin{enumerate}
\item[(i)] \( \forall n \) \( E[|Z_n|] < \infty \) and
\item[(ii)] \( \forall n \geq 1 \) \( E[Z_n | Z_0, Z_1, \ldots, Z_{n-1}] = Z_{n-1} \).
\end{enumerate}

In particular, \( E[Z_n] \) does not depend on \( n \).

\textbf{Corollary.} Let \( \langle Z_n ; n \geq 0 \rangle \) be a martingale and \( N \) be a finite stopping time. If \( E|Z_N| < \infty \) and \( \lim_{n \to \infty} E[Z_n 1_{[N>n]}] = 0 \), then
\[
E[Z_N] = E[Z_0].
\]

\textbf{Proof.} Apply the extension of Wald’s equation with \( X_n := Z_n - Z_{n-1} \) and \( \mu := 0 \).

For example, the hypotheses of this corollary hold if \( N \) is a bounded stopping time, but not if you gamble on fair games until you are ahead.

\textbf{Example 6.2(a) and more of 3.5(a) (Computing Mean Time to Occurrence of a Pattern).} Suppose \( Y_n \) are i.i.d. for \( n \geq 1 \), with values 0, 1, 2 that have corresponding probabilities \( \frac{1}{2}, \frac{1}{3}, \frac{1}{6} \). Let \( N \) be the first time we see the pattern 020. What is \( E[N] \)?

Suppose that at each time \( n \), gambler number \( n \) begins betting the pattern will occur starting then. More precisely, at time \( n \), gambler \( n \) pays us 1. If \( Y_n \neq 0 \), he gets nothing and quits. If \( Y_n = 0 \), then we pay him 2 (to be fair) and gambler \( n \) bets 2 on \( Y_{n+1} = 2 \).

If \( Y_{n+1} \neq 2 \), then we keep the 2 of gambler \( n \), but if \( Y_{n+1} = 2 \), then we pay him back \( 6 \times 2 = 12 \) and gambler \( n \) bets 12 on \( Y_{n+2} = 0 \). If he loses, then we keep his 12. If he wins, we pay back \( 2 \times 12 = 24 \). At this point, gambler \( n \) quits.

Let \( X_n \) be our net gain after time \( n \) and write \( X_n := n - R_n \). Then at time \( N \), we have collected 1 from each player 1, \ldots, \( N \), paid back nothing (net) to players 1, 2, \ldots, \( N - 3 \), paid 24 to player \( N - 2 \), nothing to player \( N - 1 \), and 2 to player \( N \). Thus \( R_N = 24 + 2 = 26 \).
Since \( \langle X_n \rangle \) is a martingale (all bets being fair), it follows (since \( N \wedge n \) is a bounded stopping time) that \( \forall n \)

\[
0 = E[X_{N \wedge n}] = E[N \wedge n] - E[R_{N \wedge n}].
\]

Since \( 0 \leq R_{N \wedge n} \leq 26 \) and \( R_{N \wedge n} \to R_N = 26 \) as \( n \to \infty \), the MCT and BCT give

\[
E[N] = 26. \ldots
\]

Similarly, the mean time until HHTTHH if \( P[H] = p \) is equal to the payback at the corresponding time \( N \), i.e., \( p^{-4}q^{-2} + p^{-2} + p^{-1} \), where \( q := 1 - p \). \ldots

We now compute the chance that one pattern occurs before another, e.g., \( A := \langle 0, 2, 0 \rangle \) before \( B := \langle 1, 0, 0, 2 \rangle \) in the first game above. The key is the use of the following relations. Let \( N_A, N_B \) be the first time \( A, B \) occur, respectively, \( M := N_A \wedge N_B \), and \( P_A \) be the probability that \( A \) occurs before \( B \). Let \( N_{A|B} \) be the number of trials after \( B \) occurs until \( A \) occurs, and define \( N_{B|A} \) likewise. Then

\[
E[N_A] = E[M + (N_A - M)] = E[M] + E[N_A - M | N_B < N_A](1 - P_A)
\]

\[
= E[M] + (1 - P_A)E[N_{A|B}],
\]

\[
E[N_B] = E[M] + P_A E[N_{B|A}].
\]

\[
\ldots \text{ Solving for } P_A \text{ and } E[M] \text{ gives}
\]

\[
P_A = \frac{E[N_B] + E[N_{A|B}] - E[N_A]}{E[N_{B|A}] + E[N_{A|B}]},
\]

and

\[
E[M] = E[N_B] - P_A E[N_{B|A}].
\]

In the case at hand, we already have \( E[N_A] = 26 \). Similar reasoning gives \( E[N_B] = 72 \). Clearly \( E[N_{B|A}] = 72 \) as well. To calculate \( E[N_{A|B}] \), we could use the same scheme as before, with gamblers starting to bet at each trial hoping to get \( A \), but now we simply assume that \( B \) occurs immediately, i.e., the first 4 trials are 1, 0, 0, 2: what occurs after this is still a martingale, but \( X_4 \), our net gain after these 4 trials, no longer has expectation 0. However, this is a little confusing, so instead, we do the following. We have that

\[
N_{A|B} = N_{A|\langle 0, 2 \rangle} \text{ and } N_A = N_{\langle 0, 2 \rangle} + N_{A|\langle 0, 2 \rangle}, \ldots \text{ whence } E[N_{A|B}] = E[N_A] - E[N_{\langle 0, 2 \rangle}] = 26 - 12 = 14. \text{ Substitution into our formulas gives}
\]

\[
P_A = \frac{30}{43} \text{ and } E[M] = \frac{936}{43}.
\]

Chapter 7

Random Walks

§7.1. Duality in Random Walks.

If \( \langle X_i \rangle \) are i.i.d. and \( S_n := \sum_{i=1}^{n} X_i \) is the corresponding random walk, then a useful observation is the “duality” property that \( \langle X_1, X_2, \ldots, X_n \rangle \overset{D}{=} \langle X_n, X_{n-1}, \ldots, X_1 \rangle \). We give two applications. Let

\[
N := \min\{n; S_n > 0\},
\]

\[
M := \text{number of new minima of } \langle S_n \rangle
\]

\[
= |\{n; \forall k \in [0, n) \ S_n \leq S_k\}|,
\]

\[
R_n := \text{number of distinct values of } \langle S_k; 0 \leq k \leq n \rangle
\]

\[
= |\{S_0, S_1, \ldots, S_n\}|
\]

\[
= |\{k \in [0, n]; \forall j \in [0, k) \ S_k \neq S_j\}|
\]

\[
= |\{k \in [0, n]; \forall j \in (k, n] \ S_k \neq S_j\}|
\]

\( R_n \) is called (the size of) the range of \( \langle S_k; 0 \leq k \leq n \rangle \). If \( E[X] \) exists and is positive, then by the SLLN, \( S_n \to \infty \) a.s., whence \( N < \infty \) a.s. and \( M < \infty \) a.s. Always \( R_n \to \infty \) a.s. (except if \( X = 0 \) a.s.).

**Proposition 7.1.1.** If \( \mu := E[X] > 0 \), then \( E[N] = E[M] < \infty \) and \( E[S_N] = \mu E[N] \).

**Proposition 7.1.2.** Without any assumption on \( E[X] \),

\[
\lim_{n \to \infty} \frac{E[R_n]}{n} = P[\text{no return to 0}] = P[\forall n > 0 \ S_n \neq 0].
\]

Hence \( \lim E[R_n]/n = 0 \iff \text{the random walk is recurrent.} \)

**Proof of Proposition 7.1.1.** We have

\[
E[N] = \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} P[N > n] = \sum_{n \geq 0} P[\forall k \leq n \ S_k \leq 0].
\]
By duality, this...

\[
\sum_{n \geq 0} P[\forall k \leq n \ S_n - S_{n-k} \leq 0] = \sum_{n \geq 0} P[S_n \text{ is a new minimum}] = E[M].
\]

Now the sequence of times at which minima occur form a renewal sequence with interarrival times allowed to be infinite. Indeed, there are only a finite number of renewals since \(\mu > 0\); their number is a geometric random variable, so \(E[M] < \infty\). Since this means that \(E[N] < \infty\) also, we may apply Wald’s equation (not its extension) to conclude when \(\mu < \infty\). If \(\mu = \infty\), then \(E[S_N] \geq E[S_N 1_{[N=1]}] = E[X_1 1_{[X_1 > 0]}] \geq E[X_1] = \infty\), so the result holds still.

**Proof of Proposition 7.1.2.** We have

\[
E[R_n] = \sum_{k=0}^{n} P[\forall j \in (k, n] \ S_k \neq S_j]
\]

\[
= \sum_{k=0}^{n} P[\forall i \in (0, n-k] \ S_0 \neq S_i]
\]

\[
= \sum_{k=0}^{n} P[\forall i \in (0, k] \ S_i \neq 0].
\]

Since the summands \(\to P[\text{no return to 0}]\), the result follows.

**Remark.** For the proof of Proposition 7.1.2, we used stationarity and reversed counting, rather than duality (which the book uses). Thus, the result is more general: it applies to stationary \((X_i)\). We also don’t need the values of \(X\) to lie in \(\mathbb{R}\). It is also true that \(R_n/n \to P[\text{no return}]\) a.s. (Kesten, Spitzer, and Whitman; use the Kingman subadditive ergodic theorem to prove this).

**Example 7.1(a).** Suppose that \(X = \pm 1\) with probability \(\frac{1}{2} \pm \alpha\). Then \(P[\text{no return}] = 1 - f_{00} = 2|\alpha|\) (see the calculation of the Green function or the gambler’s ruin problem).

\[\toparrow\]

Read Proposition 7.1.3 in the book.
Chapter 8

Brownian Motion and Other Markov Processes

§ 8.1. Introduction and Preliminaries.

The motion of a particle floating on water seems random. Model one coordinate \( \langle X(t) \rangle \) as follows: \( \langle X(t) \rangle \) is a stochastic process with independent, stationary increments and continuous paths. Because of momentum, the independence of increments is not a great assumption, but we will not study a better model.

For \( 0 \leq s \leq t \), define

\[
M(s, t) := \max \{ |X(u) - X(v)| ; s \leq u \leq v \leq t \}.
\]

Now, because \( \langle X(t) \rangle \) is uniformly continuous on \( [0, 1] \), we have

\[
J_n := \lim_{n \to \infty} \max_{|s-t| \leq 1/n, s, t \in [0, 1]} M(s, t) \to 0
\]

as \( n \to \infty \), whence \( \forall \delta > 0 \ P[J_n \geq \delta] \to 0 \). In particular, if

\[
H_n := \max_{1 \leq k \leq n} M((k-1)/n, k/n),
\]

then \( \forall \delta > 0 \ P[H_n \geq \delta] \to 0 \) since \( H_n \leq J_n \). Now

\[
P[H_n \geq \delta] = 1 - P[H_n < \delta] = 1 - \prod_{k=1}^{n} P[M((k-1)/n, k/n) < \delta]
\]

\[
= 1 - P[M(0, 1/n) < \delta]^n
\]

\[
= 1 - \left[ 1 - P[M(0, 1/n) \geq \delta] \right]^n
\]

\[
\geq 1 - e^{-nP[M(0, 1/n) \geq \delta]}
\]
since $1 - x \leq e^{-x}$ for all $x \in \mathbb{R}$. Therefore, $nP[M(0, 1/n) \geq \delta] \to 0$. ... By considering the largest $n$ for which $h \leq 1/n$, it follows that

$$\forall \delta > 0 \lim_{h \to 0^+} \frac{P[M(0, h) \geq \delta]}{h} = 0. \quad \text{(N1)}$$

... Compare to a Poisson process. Using this and the CLT, one can show (see Breiman’s *Probability*, Proposition 12.4) that

$$\exists \mu \in \mathbb{R} \exists \sigma \geq 0 \forall t \geq 0 \quad X(t) - X(0) \sim N(\mu t, \sigma^2 t). \quad \text{(N2)}$$
We call such a process a **Brownian motion** (B.M.) if \(X(0)\) is independent of \((X(t) - X(0) \mid t > 0)\). If \(X(0) \equiv 0, \mu = 0, \) and \(\sigma = 1\), it is a **standard Brownian motion** or, simply, **Brownian motion**. In general, \(\mu\) is called the **drift** and \(\sigma^2\) is the **variance parameter**. We always assume that \(\sigma \neq 0\). Note that

\[
\frac{X(t) - X(0) - \mu t}{\sigma}
\]

is a standard Brownian motion and, if \(B(t)\) is a standard Brownian motion, then \(X(t) := a + \mu t + \sigma B(t)\) is a Brownian motion starting at \(a\) with drift \(\mu\) and variance parameter \(\sigma^2\).

... Also, if \(X\) is a Brownian motion, then \(-X\) is a Brownian motion. By the independent increments property, a Brownian motion is a Markov process.

A stochastic process with independent, stationary increments satisfying (N2) need not be continuous, even a.s., despite the book’s claim (p. 358). ... Adding (N1) to (N2) does imply a.s. continuity. However, given a process \(X(\cdot)\) with independent, stationary increments satisfying (N2), there is a Brownian motion \(\tilde{X}(\cdot)\) such that \(\forall t \ P[X(t) = \tilde{X}(t)] = 1\). This is not easy to show.

Why should we believe that a Brownian motion exists? We can get it as a limit of random walks that take small steps very quickly: let \(Y_n\) be i.i.d. \(\pm 1\) steps with \(E[Y_n] = 0, \Delta x > 0, \) and \(\Delta t > 0\). If we want a step of size \(\Delta x\) to take place in time \(\Delta t\), we can let

\[
D(t) := \sum_{k=1}^{\lfloor t/\Delta t \rfloor} \Delta x \cdot Y_k.
\]

How should \(\Delta x\) and \(\Delta t\) be related? We have

\[
\text{Var} D(t) = \lfloor t/\Delta t \rfloor \cdot (\Delta x)^2 \cdot 1,
\]

so if \(D(t)\) converges to standard Brownian motion \(X(t)\), we should have \((\Delta x)^2/\Delta t\) converging to 1. So take \(\Delta t := 1/n, \Delta x = 1/\sqrt{n}\), and let \(D_n(t)\) be the corresponding process. By the CLT, \(D_n(t) \Rightarrow N(0, t)\). In fact, the finite dimensional marginals of \(D_n(t)\) converge to those of standard Brownian motion. ... This makes quite plausible the existence of Brownian motion and shows how its study extends the study of sums of i.i.d. random variables. Note that there was nothing special about \(Y_n\) being \(\pm 1\). Similarly, if the steps of a random walk are of size \(\sigma/\sqrt{n}\) taken each \(1/n\) unit of time and are \(\pm \sigma/\sqrt{n}\) with probability \(\frac{1}{2} \pm \frac{\mu}{2\sigma\sqrt{n}}\) (for \(n\) large), then the random walk converges to Brownian motion with drift \(\mu\) and variance parameter \(\sigma^2\). ... Of course, we could also get this Brownian motion from standard Brownian motion by the linear modification above.
§8.3.3. Geometric Brownian Motion.

To model stock prices, say, one needs a stochastic process that is $\geq 0$. Furthermore, it might be reasonable that % changes over time intervals of the same length are i.i.d., that is, that the distribution of $[X(t + \Delta t) - X(t)] / X(t)$ should depend on $\Delta t$ but not on $t$, and that these quotients should be independent when disjoint intervals $[t, t + \Delta t]$ are considered. This is the same as having $X(t + \Delta t) / X(t)$ be i.i.d., or of having $\log X(t + \Delta t) - \log X(t)$ be i.i.d. In other words, if prices are continuous, then this is the same as $Y(t) := \log X(t)$ being a Brownian motion, i.e.,

$$X(t) = e^{Y(t)}, \quad Y \text{ a Brownian motion.}$$

Such an $X$ is called a **geometric Brownian motion**.

Recall that the m.g.f. of a normal random variable $W$ is

$$E[e^{aW}] = e^{aE[W] + a^2 \text{Var}(W)/2}.$$ 

Thus, for $X$ as above and $s < t$,

$$E\left[\frac{X(t)}{X(s)}\right] = E\left[e^{Y(t) - Y(s)}\right] = e^{\mu(t-s) + \sigma^2(t-s)/2}.$$ 

Note that

$$E\left[X(t) \mid \langle X(u) \; ; \; 0 \leq u \leq s \rangle\right] = X(s)E\left[\frac{X(t)}{X(s)} \mid \langle X(u) \; ; \; 0 \leq u \leq s \rangle\right]$$

$$= X(s)E\left[\frac{X(t)}{X(s)}\right] = X(s)e^{\mu(t-s) + \sigma^2(t-s)/2}.$$
Therefore,

\[ E\left[ e^{-\alpha t} X(t) \mid \langle X(u) : 0 \leq u \leq s \rangle \right] = e^{-\alpha s} X(s) \]  \quad (N3)

when

\[ \alpha = \mu + \sigma^2/2. \]  \quad (N4)

Later, we will see that this means that \( \langle e^{-\alpha t} X(t) \rangle \) is a continuous-time martingale.

Note that if \( \alpha \) is the (continuously compounded) interest rate, then the “theoretical” future price of the stock discounted to present value should be a martingale: if the = in (N3) didn’t hold, either no one would buy, so the price would fall, or there would be an infinite demand, so the price would rise. Thus, if geometric Brownian motion is to be a good model for stock prices and these other ideal assumptions hold, then we would certainly need (N3) and (N4), where \( \alpha \) is the interest rate.

Now various kinds of options are also available on the stock. For example, for cost \( c \), you can purchase a “call” option that gives you the right (not obligation) to buy a share of the stock at a fixed time \( T \) for a fixed price \( K \). What should \( c \) be as a function of \( T \) and \( K \)? At time \( T \), this option is worth \( (X(T) - K)^+ \), so now, at time 0, it is worth \( e^{-\alpha T}(X(T) - K)^+ \). This means that we should have the theoretical price

\[ c = E\left[ e^{-\alpha T}(X(T) - K)^+ \right]. \]

When computed, this gives the **Black–Scholes formula.** Briefly, this goes as follows: since \( Y(T) - Y(0) \sim N(\mu T, \sigma^2 T) \), we have

\[ c = e^{-\alpha T} \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} (X(0)e^y - K)^+ \frac{1}{\sqrt{2\pi\sigma^2 T}} e^{-(y-\mu T)^2/(2\sigma^2 T)} dy \]

\[ = \frac{e^{-\alpha T}}{\sqrt{2\pi\sigma^2 T}} \int_{\log(K/X(0))}^{\infty} (X(0)e^y - K) e^{-(y-\mu T)^2/(2\sigma^2 T)} dy \]

\[ = X(0)\Phi(\sigma \sqrt{T} + b) - Ke^{-\alpha T}\Phi(b), \]

where

\[ b := \frac{\alpha T - \sigma^2 T/2 - \log(K/X(0))}{\sigma \sqrt{T}} \quad \text{and} \quad \Phi := \text{c.d.f. of } N(0, 1). \]

This uses (N4) to eliminate \( \mu \) in favor of \( \alpha \) and \( \sigma^2 \).
§8.2. Hitting Times, Maximum Value, and Arc Sine Laws.

How long does it take (standard) Brownian motion to hit \( a \neq 0 \)? By symmetry, we may consider only \( a > 0 \). Let \( T_a := \inf\{t \geq 0; X(t) = a\} \) be the hitting time of \( a \). Note that

\[
P[X(t) \geq a \mid T_a \leq t] = \frac{1}{2}
\]

by symmetry and the strong Markov property. (This was stated in Chap. 2: Suppose \( \tau \) is a random variable with values in \([0, \infty)\) such that for all \( s \), the event that \( \tau \leq s \) depends only on \( X(t) \) for \( t \leq s \). Then if an event \( A \) is defined in terms of \( X(t) \) for \( t \leq \tau \) and another event \( B \) is defined in terms of \( X(\tau + t) - X(\tau) \) for \( t \geq 0 \), then \( A \) and \( B \) are independent. Furthermore, the law of \( \langle X(\tau + t) - X(\tau); t \geq 0 \rangle \) is the same as the law of \( \langle X(t); t \geq 0 \rangle \).) This is called the reflection principle. Since \( X(t) \geq a \Rightarrow T_a \leq t \), this is the same as

\[
P[T_a \leq t] = 2 P[X(t) \geq a] = \frac{2}{\sqrt{2\pi t}} \int_a^\infty e^{-x^2/(2t)} \, dx
\]

\[
= \sqrt{\frac{2}{\pi}} \int_{a/\sqrt{t}}^\infty e^{-y^2/2} \, dy.
\]

In particular, \( P[T_a < \infty] = 1 \), so Brownian motion is recurrent. Is it positive recurrent, by which we mean: is \( E[T_a] < \infty \)? Note that

\[
P[T_a > t] = \sqrt{\frac{2}{\pi}} \int_0^{a/\sqrt{t}} e^{-y^2/2} \, dy \sim \sqrt{\frac{2}{\pi}} \frac{a}{\sqrt{t}} \quad \text{as } t \to \infty,
\]

whence \( E[T_a] = \int_0^\infty P[T_a > t] \, dt = \infty \). Thus, Brownian motion is null recurrent. This could also have been derived from the null recurrence of simple random walk on \( \mathbb{Z} \): Let
\[ \tau_0 := 0, \ \tau_1 := T_1 \land T_{-1}, \ \text{and, in general, let} \ \tau_{n+1} \ \text{be the first time} \ t \ \text{after} \ \tau_n \ \text{that} \ X(t) \ \text{is} \ X(\tau_n) \pm 1. \ \text{Then} \ \langle X(\tau_n) \rangle_n \ \text{is simple random walk with} \ E[\tau_{n+1} - \tau_n] = E[\tau_1] = 1 \ (\text{to be proved later}). \ \text{Let} \ N := \min\{n; X(\tau_n) = 1\}. \ \text{Then}\]

\[ T_1 = \sum_{n=1}^{N} (\tau_n - \tau_{n-1}), \]

so Wald’s equation gives \( E[T_1] = E[N] = \infty. \ldots \)

Note that we easily get the distribution of another random variable: for \( a > 0, \)

\[ P\left[ \max_{0 \leq s \leq t} X(s) < a \right] = P\left[ T_a > t \right] = \sqrt{\frac{2}{\pi}} \int_{0}^{a/\sqrt{t}} e^{-y^2/2} \, dy. \]

§8.3.1. Brownian Motion Absorbed at a Value.

Define \textit{Brownian motion absorbed at} \( a \) \textit{by} \( Z(t) := \begin{cases} X(t), & \text{if} \ t < T_a, \\ a, & \text{if} \ t \geq T_a. \end{cases} \)

If \( a > 0, \)

\[ P[Z(t) = a] = P[T_a \leq t] = \sqrt{\frac{2}{\pi}} \int_{a/\sqrt{t}}^{\infty} e^{-y^2/2} \, dy. \]

What is more interesting is the rest of the distribution of \( Z(t) \): for \( x < a, \)

\[ P[Z(t) \leq x] = \frac{1}{\sqrt{2\pi t}} \int_{x-2a}^{x} e^{-y^2/(2t)} \, dy. \]

This is shown by clever use of the reflection principle: read §8.3.1.

§8.3.2. Brownian Motion Reflected at the Origin.

How do we reflect Brownian motion at, say, 0? We simply define

\[ Z(t) := |X(t)|. \]

One could similarly reflect at both \( -a < 0 \) and \( b > 0. \) Interesting work is currently being done on reflecting Brownian motion in higher dimensions, which is often related to queueing theory.
§8.4. Brownian Motion with Drift.

If \( \langle X(t) \rangle \) is a Markov process and \( f \) is a real-valued function on the state space for which

\[ (Lf)(x) := \lim_{t \to 0^+} E_x \left[ \frac{f(X(t)) - f(x)}{t} \right] \]

exists for every initial state \( x \), then we write \( f \in \mathcal{D}_L \). More generally, \( \mathcal{D}_L(x) \) denotes the set of functions \( f \) for which \( (Lf)(x) \) exists. Thus, \( \mathcal{D}_L = \bigcap_x \mathcal{D}_L(x) \). The functional \( L \) defined on \( \mathcal{D}_L \) is called the **infinitesimal generator** of the process.

For Brownian motion, the above notation is interpreted as \( X(t) = B(t) + x \), where \( B(\cdot) \) is a Brownian motion with the same drift and variance parameter as \( X \), but \( B(0) \equiv x \).

**Theorem.** If \( \langle X(t) \rangle \) is a Brownian motion, then \( \mathcal{D}_L \supseteq C_b^2(\mathbb{R}) \) (the space of bounded functions on \( \mathbb{R} \) with a continuous second derivative) and

\[ Lf = \mu f' + \frac{\sigma^2}{2} f'' \quad \text{for} \quad f \in C_b^2(\mathbb{R}). \]

More generally, if \( f \) is bounded on \( \mathbb{R} \) and has a continuous second derivative in a neighborhood of \( x \), then \( f \in \mathcal{D}_L(x) \) and

\[ (Lf)(x) = \mu f'(x) + \frac{\sigma^2}{2} f''(x). \]

**Proof.** Fix \( x \in \mathbb{R} \). If \( f \) has a continuous second derivative near \( x \), then

\[ f(y) = f(x) + f'(x)(y - x) + \frac{1}{2} f''(x)(y - x)^2 + o([y - x]^2). \quad (N6) \]

Therefore

\[ E_x \left[ f(X(t)) - f(x) \right] = f'(x)\mu t + f''(x)\frac{\sigma^2 t + (\mu t)^2}{2} + o(t). \quad (N7) \]

[Interchanging \( E_x \) and \( o(\cdot) \) to derive (N7) from (N6) requires justification. We will merely describe how to do this: Let \( f_0 \) be a function in \( C_b^2(\mathbb{R}) \) that has a bounded second derivative and equals \( f \) near \( x \). The chance that \( X(t) \) is not near \( x \) is \( o(t) \) by (N1), so we may replace \( f \) by \( f_0 \). Now use \( f_0(y) = f(x) + f'(x)(y - x) + (1/2)f''(x)(y - x)^2 + g(y)(y - x)^2 \) in place of (N6), where \( |g(y)| \leq \max \{|f''(z) - f''(x)|/2; |z - x| \leq |y - x|\} \). Then use the LDCT to get (N7).] Thus,

\[ E_x \left[ \frac{f(X(t)) - f(x)}{t} \right] = f'(x)\mu + f''(x)\frac{\sigma^2}{2} + o(1). \]
To apply this result, let \(a, b > 0\) and let

\[
f(x) := P_x[T_a < T_{-b}].
\]

We claim that \(Lf = 0\) on \((-b, a)\), i.e., that \(E_x[f(X(t))] = f(x) + o(t)\) as \(t \to 0\) for \(-b < x < a\). ... Note first that the Markov property implies that

\[
|f(X(t)) - P_x[T_a < T_{-b} \mid X(s) \ (s \leq t)]| \leq 1_{[T_a \wedge T_{-b} < t]}.
\]

Therefore,

\[
|E_x[f(X(t))] - f(x)| = |E_x[f(X(t))] - E_x[P_x[T_a < T_{-b} \mid X(s) \ (s \leq t)]]| \\
\leq E_x[|f(X(t)) - P_x[T_a < T_{-b} \mid X(s) \ (s \leq t)]|] \\
\leq E_x[1_{[T_a \wedge T_{-b} < t]}] = P_x[T_a \wedge T_{-b} < t].
\]

Now

\[
P_x[T_a \wedge T_{-b} < t] \leq P_x[\max_{0 \leq s \leq t} |X(s) - x| \geq |x - a| \wedge |x + b|] = o(t)
\]

by (N1). Therefore \(f \in \mathcal{D}_L\) and \(Lf = 0\), as claimed. We will not prove that \(f \in C^2(-b, a) \cap C[-b, a]\), which is true, but assume it. Consider first the case where \(\mu = 0\). Then \(f'' = 0\), so \(f\) is linear. Since \(f(a) = 1\) and \(f(-b) = 0\), we get

\[
f(x) = \frac{x + b}{a + b} \quad (-b \leq x \leq a);
\]

in particular,

\[
f(0) = \frac{b}{a + b}.
\]

Recall resistances, simple random walk.

Now let \(\mu \neq 0\). The equation \(Lf = 0\) is

\[
\mu f'(x) + \frac{\sigma^2}{2} f''(x) = 0.
\]

Integration gives

\[
\mu f(x) + \frac{\sigma^2}{2} f'(x) = C,
\]

whence

\[
\frac{d}{dx} \left\{ \frac{\sigma^2}{2} e^{2\mu x/\sigma^2} f(x) \right\} = Ce^{2\mu x/\sigma^2},
\]

... so that
\[ f(x) = C_1 + C_2 e^{-2\mu x/\sigma^2}. \]

... [We could also have used separation of variables to solve the differential equation.]

Since \( f(a) = 1 \) and \( f(-b) = 0 \), we get
\[ f(x) = \frac{e^{2\mu b/\sigma^2} - e^{-2\mu x/\sigma^2}}{e^{2\mu b/\sigma^2} - e^{-2\mu a/\sigma^2}}. \]

In particular,
\[ f(0) = \frac{e^{2\mu b/\sigma^2} - 1}{e^{2\mu b/\sigma^2} - e^{-2\mu a/\sigma^2}}. \]

This corresponds to a conductivity at \( x \) of \( e^{2\mu x/\sigma^2} \), since for a variable conductivity \( C(x) \), we have
\[ f(x) = \frac{C(x \leftrightarrow a)}{C(x \leftrightarrow a) + C(x \leftrightarrow -b)} = \frac{R(x \leftrightarrow -b)}{R(-b \leftrightarrow a)} \]
\[ = \int_{-b}^{a} C(s)^{-1} ds / \int_{-b}^{a} C(s)^{-1} ds \]
\[ = \frac{e^{2\mu s/\sigma^2} \bigg|_{-b}^{a}}{e^{-2\mu s/\sigma^2} \bigg|_{-b}^{a}}. \]

Suppose that \( \mu < 0 \). Note that \( T_{-b_1} < T_{-b_2} \) when \( X(0) = 0 \) and \( 0 < b_1 < b_2 \), so that
\( T_a < T_{-b_1} \subseteq T_a < T_{-b_2} \). Also, \( \bigcup_{b>0} [T_a < T_{-b}] = [T_a < \infty] \). … Thus, letting \( b \to +\infty \) (and using the fact that \( \mu < 0 \)) gives
\[ P_0 \left[ \max_{t \geq 0} X(t) \geq a \right] = e^{2\mu a/\sigma^2}, \]

i.e., \( \max_{t \geq 0} X(t) \sim \text{Exp}(-2\mu/\sigma^2) \). That \( \max_{t \geq 0} X(t) \) has an exponential distribution follows also from the strong Markov property. …

A similar calculation shows that
\[ P_0[T_{-b} < T_a] = 1 - f(0) = \frac{1 - e^{-2\mu a/\sigma^2}}{e^{2\mu b/\sigma^2} - e^{-2\mu a/\sigma^2}}. \]

(We could also see this first equality by noting that \( Lg = 0 \) on \((-b, a)\), where \( g(x) := f(x) + P_x[T_{-b} < T_a] \), and \( g(a) = g(-b) = 1 \).) Thus, letting \( a \to \infty \), we derive that \( P_0[T_{-b} < \infty] = 1 \). Hence the Brownian motion visits every negative real number with
probability 1. We claim that, in fact, \( \lim_{t \to \infty} X(t) = -\infty \) a.s. Let \( A \) be the event that the set of times \( t \) where \( X(t) = 0 \) is unbounded. Then \( A \subseteq [\exists t > T_{-n} \, X(t) = 0] \cup [T_{-n} = \infty] \). That last set has \( P_0 \)-probability 0 by what we just proved. On the other hand, \( P_{-n}[T_0 < \infty] = e^{2\mu n/\sigma^2} \). Thus, \( P_0(A) = 0 \), so 0 is a.s. not visited after some random, finite time. Likewise, every negative integer is not visited after some random, finite time, whence the Brownian motion tends to \(-\infty\) a.s.

Here’s an interesting game. Brownian motion \( X(t) \) with parameter \((\mu, \sigma^2), \mu < 0, X(0) \equiv 0\), is run for all \( t \geq 0 \) “quickly”. You may stop it at any time before you know its future (e.g., you are not allowed to know \( \max_{t \geq 0} X(t) \)); if you stop it at time \( t \), then you collect \( X(t) \). You are not required to stop it. How much should you pay to play?

If your rule is to fix \( x \) and stop if and when \( X(t) = x \), then your expected gain would be \( x P[\max_{t \geq 0} X(t) \geq x] = xe^{2\mu x/\sigma^2} \), which is maximal at \( x = -\sigma^2/(2\mu) \), so the value is \(-\sigma^2/(2\mu e) \). The clairvoyant value of this game is \(-\sigma^2/(2\mu) \), so we lose only a factor of \( e \). Best possible strategy, as we’ll see later using martingales.

§8.1. Introduction and Preliminaries (again).

For some additional topics, we need to study the multivariate normal distribution, Example 1.4(b), since \( \langle X(t_1), \ldots, X(t_n) \rangle \) has this distribution. Recall again that the m.g.f. of \( N(\mu, \sigma^2) \) is \( t \mapsto e^{\mu t + \sigma^2 t^2/2} \). If \( X_i \sim N(\mu_i, \sigma_i^2) \) \((i = 1, 2)\) are independent, then the m.g.f. of \( X_1 + X_2 \) is

\[
t \mapsto E[e^{t(X_1+X_2)}] = E[e^{tX_1}] E[e^{tX_2}] = \exp \{(\mu_1 + \mu_2)t + (\sigma_1^2 + \sigma_2^2)t^2/2\},
\]

whence, by uniqueness of the m.g.f. (which requires some assumptions and which we did not prove), \( X_1 + X_2 \sim N(\mu_1 + \mu_2, \sigma_1^2 + \sigma_2^2) \).

Define the **joint m.g.f.** of random variables \( X_1, \ldots, X_n \) by

\[
(t_1, \ldots, t_n) \mapsto E[e^{\sum_{i=1}^n t_i X_i}].
\]

This uniquely determines the joint distribution of \( \langle X_1, \ldots, X_n \rangle \) when it is finite for all \( (t_1, \ldots, t_n) \). The notation is simpler if we use vectors: \( t := (t_1, \ldots, t_n) \), \( X := (X_1, \ldots, X_n) \), \( t \mapsto E[e^{t \cdot X}] \).

Now let \( Z_1, \ldots, Z_n \) be independent normal random variables, \( \mu_i, a_{ij} \in \mathbb{R} \) \((1 \leq i \leq m, 1 \leq j \leq n)\), and

\[
X_i = \sum_{j=1}^n a_{ij} Z_j + \mu_i \quad (1 \leq i \leq m).
\]
Then we say that \( \langle X_1, \ldots, X_m \rangle \) has a **multivariate normal distribution**, or that they are **jointly normal random variables**. Note that by the preceding result, each \( X_i \) is normal. In addition, it follows from the definition that random variables that are linear combinations of the coordinates of a multivariate normal random vector also have a multivariate normal distribution.

Consider the joint m.g.f. \( t \mapsto E[e^{t \cdot X}] \). Since \( t \cdot X \) is normal too for a given \( t \), we need merely find \( E[t \cdot X] \) and \( \text{Var}(t \cdot X) \) in order to determine \( E[e^{t \cdot X}] \). These functions of \( t \), in turn, are easily specified via \( E[X_i] \) and \( \text{Cov}(X_i, X_j) \). We conclude that the joint distribution of \( \langle X_1, \ldots, X_m \rangle \) is uniquely determined by their individual expectations and their pairwise covariances.

Let’s be more explicit. We have

\[
E[e^{t \cdot X}] = \exp\{E[t \cdot X] + \text{Var}(t \cdot X)/2\} = \exp\left\{ \sum_i t_i E[X_i] + \sum_{i,j} t_i t_j \text{Cov}(X_i, X_j)/2 \right\}.
\]

Now consider the case that for some index subset \( I \), we have \( \text{Cov}(X_k, X_\ell) = 0 \) whenever \( k \in I \) and \( \ell \notin I \). Then the above can be factored as

\[
E[e^{t \cdot X}] = \exp\left\{ \sum_{i \in I} t_i E[X_i] + \sum_{i,j \in I} t_i t_j \text{Cov}(X_i, X_j)/2 \right\} \times \exp\left\{ \sum_{i \notin I} t_i E[X_i] + \sum_{i,j \notin I} t_i t_j \text{Cov}(X_i, X_j)/2 \right\}.
\]

Since the m.g.f. determines the joint distribution, it follows that \( \langle X_k; k \in I \rangle \) is independent of \( \langle X_\ell; \ell \notin I \rangle \). … In other words, for jointly normal random variables, pairwise independence is the same as mutual independence.

**Definition.** A **Gaussian process** \( \langle X(t); t \geq 0 \rangle \) is a stochastic process such that \( \forall t_1, \ldots, t_n \) \( \langle X(t_1), \ldots, X(t_n) \rangle \) has a multivariate normal distribution.

By the preceding, we see that a Gaussian process has all its finite-dimensional marginals uniquely determined by the numbers \( E[X(t)], \text{Cov}(X(s), X(t)) \). This determines the process as a whole in the usual sense of distribution; continuous sample paths are a different matter.

For example, every Brownian motion \( X \) with \( X(0) \) being constant is a Gaussian process. …
Suppose that a Gaussian process $X$ with $X(0) \equiv 0$ is at $A$ at time $t$. How did it get there? I.e., what is the distribution of the process $\langle X(s) \rangle_{0 \leq s \leq t}$ given $X(t) = A$? Let $0 < s < t$. Forget the conditioning for the moment. Write $Q(s, t) := \Cov(X(s), X(t))$ and

$$Y(s) := X(s) - \frac{Q(s, t)}{Q(t, t)} X(t).$$

Write this as

$$X(s) = Y(s) + \frac{Q(s, t)}{Q(t, t)} X(t);$$

1st the first part, $Y(s)$, has covariance 0 with the second part, ... whence the two parts are independent. That is, the distribution of $X(s)$ given $X(t) = A$ is the same as the unconditional distribution of $Y(s) + \frac{Q(s, t)}{Q(t, t)} A$. ... Because pairwise independence implies mutual independence for jointly normal random variables, it follows that given $0 \leq s_1 < s_2 < \cdots < s_n < t$, the random variables $\langle Y(s_k) ; 1 \leq k \leq n \rangle$ are independent of $X(t)$, and so the conditional distribution of $\langle Y(s_k) ; 1 \leq k \leq n \rangle$ given $X(t) = A$ equals the unconditional distribution of $\langle Y(s_k) + \frac{Q(s_k, t)}{Q(t, t)} A ; 1 \leq k \leq n \rangle$. These random variables are linear combinations of those in $X$ (plus constants), whence have a multivariate normal distribution. That is, $\langle Y(s) + \frac{Q(s, t)}{Q(t, t)} A ; 0 \leq s \leq t \rangle$ is a Gaussian process. In particular, the process $\langle X(s) ; 0 \leq s \leq t \rangle$ given $X(t) = A$ is a Gaussian process. (In fact, the argument above allows one to extend to $s > t$ as well.)

Consider the special case of a Brownian motion with $X(0) \equiv 0$ and parameter $(\mu, \sigma^2)$. Conditional that $X(t) = A$, this is called Brownian bridge $Z(\cdot)$ (from 0 to $A$ on $[0, t]$). If $s \leq t$, then

$$\Cov(X(s), X(t)) = \Cov(X(s), X(t) - X(s) + X(s))$$

$$= \Var(X(s)) = \sigma^2 s.$$

Using our formula for general Gaussian processes, we get that the distribution of $Z(s)$ equals the (unconditional) distribution of $X(s) - (s/t)(X(t) - A)$. ... Since this is a Gaussian process, we can characterize it by its means and covariances. These are, for $0 \leq s \leq s' \leq t$,

$$E[Z(s)] = E[X(s) - (s/t)(X(t) - A)] = \mu s - (s/t)(\mu t - A) = As/t$$

and

$$\Cov(Z(s), Z(s')) = \Cov(X(s) - (s/t)X(t), X(s') - (s'/t)X(t))$$

$$= \sigma^2(s - ss'/t - ss'/t + ss'/t) = \sigma^2(s-t)/(s-t).$$

105

For example, the conditional distribution of $X(s)$ given $X(t) = A$ is $N(As/t, \sigma^2 s (t - s)/t)$. Also note that $E[X(s) \mid X(t) = A]$ is linear in $s$ and the variance $\to 0$ as $s \to 0$ and as $s \to t$.

We also notice that the distribution of the Brownian bridge process is independent of $\mu$, which is quite surprising at first. Now the unconditional law of $\langle X(s) \rangle_{0 \leq s \leq t}$ is a mixture of these conditional laws, where $A = X(t) \sim N(\mu t, \sigma^2 t)$ does depend on $\mu$. In other words, first sample $X(t) \sim N(\mu t, \sigma^2 t)$, and then sample the Brownian bridge from 0 to this value of $X(t)$. Thus, the drift $\mu$ cannot be estimated more precisely by knowing $\langle X(s) \mid 0 \leq s \leq t \rangle$ than by knowing $X(t)$ alone. We can also note that the law of $\langle X(s) - As; 0 \leq s \leq t \rangle$ given $X(t) = A$ is the same as the law of $\langle X(s); 0 \leq s \leq t \rangle$ given $X(t) = 0$. Thus, when we sample the Brownian bridge from 0 to $A$, we could just sample a Brownian bridge from 0 to 0 and add to it the linear function $s \mapsto As$ to get a bridge from 0 to $A$.

The standard Brownian bridge has $A = 0$, $t = 1$, and $\sigma = 1$. In fact, for simplicity, we now take $t = 1$ for the following summary:

**Proposition 8.1.1.** If $\langle X(t); t \geq 0 \rangle$ is a Brownian motion with $X(0) \equiv 0$ and $Z(t) := X(t) - X(1)t + At$, then $\langle Z(t); 0 \leq t \leq 1 \rangle$ is a Brownian bridge from 0 to $A$.

\[ \triangleright \text{Read pp. 361--363 in the book.} \]
§8.4.1. Using Martingales to Analyze Brownian Motion.

Generalizing from the case of discrete time, we call $\langle Z(t); t \geq 0 \rangle$ a **martingale** if

(i) \( \forall t \) \( E|Z(t)| < \infty \) and

(ii) \( \forall s < t \) \( E[Z(t) \mid \langle Z(u); 0 \leq u \leq s \rangle] = Z(s) \).

We call a \([0, \infty]-\)valued random variable \( \tau \) a **stopping time** (for \( Z(\cdot) \)) if \( \forall t \) \( 1_{[\tau \leq t]} \) is a function of \( \langle Z(s); 0 \leq s \leq t \rangle \). One can check that if \( \tau \) is a stopping time, then so is \( \tau \wedge r \) for every \( r \geq 0 \). More generally, if \( \tau_1 \) and \( \tau_2 \) are both stopping times, then so is \( \tau_1 \wedge \tau_2 \).

**Theorem.** Let \( \langle Z(t); t \geq 0 \rangle \) be a martingale with right-continuous sample paths a.s. and let \( \tau \) be an a.s. finite stopping time. If \( E|Z(\tau)| < \infty \) and \( \lim_{t \to \infty} E[Z(t)1_{[\tau > t]}] = 0 \), then

\[
E[Z(\tau)] = E[Z(0)].
\]

Note: If \( \tau \) is bounded, then the hypotheses are automatically satisfied. To see that, approximate \( \tau \) by finite-valued stopping times and use that \( |Z(t)| \) is a submartingale, so \( E|Z(\tau)| \leq E|Z(t)| \) for any fixed \( t > \|\tau\|_{\infty} \). To prove this theorem, apply Durrett, Theorem 7.5.1, to \( \tau \wedge t \) and let \( t \to \infty \).

**Example:** If \( \langle X(t) \rangle \) is a Brownian motion with drift \( \mu \) and \( E|X(0)| < \infty \), then \( \langle X(t) - \mu t \rangle \)

1”

is a martingale. ... In particular, if \( \tau \) satisfies the conditions of the theorem above, then

\[
E[X(\tau)] = E[X(0)] + \mu E[\tau].
\]

For example, if \( \mu < 0 \) and we are forced to choose such a stopping time and collect \( X(\tau) \), then to maximize our expected gain, we should take \( \tau = 0 \). The same conclusion holds even without such assumptions on \( \tau \) as long as \( \tau \) is finite a.s., in contrast to the game we analyzed earlier. This may be a surprise since a.s. there exists an open interval of time where \( X > 0 \). What makes it impossible to stop a.s. at such a time, however, is that there is no time \( t > 0 \) such that a.s. there is some \( s \geq t \) with \( X(s) > 0 \), nor is there any \( x > 0 \) such that a.s. there is some time \( t \) with \( X(t) \geq x \). Indeed, let \( \tau \) be any a.s. finite stopping time. Write \( M := \max_{t \geq 0} X(t) \), which has an exponential distribution, as we saw earlier. For every \( n \geq 0 \), the stopping time \( \tau \wedge T_{-n} \) satisfies the conditions of the theorem because \( |X(\tau \wedge T_{-n})| \lor |X(t)1_{[\tau \wedge T_{-n} > t]}| \leq n \lor M \) is integrable. We deduce

\[
E[X(\tau \wedge T_{-n})] = E[X(0)] + \mu E[\tau \wedge T_{-n}].
\]

As \( n \to \infty \), the right-hand side of the preceding equality tends to \( E[X(0)] + \mu E[\tau] \) by the MCT, and this is \( < E[X(0)] \) if \( \tau \neq 0 \). On the other hand,

\[
E[(X(\tau) - X(\tau \wedge T_{-n}))] \leq M_n 1_{[\tau > T_{-n}]},
\]

where \( M_n := \max_{t \geq T_{-n}} X(t) + n \) has the same law as \( M \). Let \( m_n \) be such that \( P[M \geq m_n] = P[\tau > T_{-n}] \). Since \( \lim_{n \to \infty} T_{-n} = \infty \) and \( \tau \) is finite a.s., we have \( \lim_{n \to \infty} P[\tau >
\[ T_{-n} = 0. \] Therefore, \( \lim_{n \to \infty} m_n = \infty \), and so \( E[M_n 1_{[\tau > T_{-n}]}] \leq E[M_n ; M_n \geq m_n] = E[M ; M \geq m_n] \to 0 \) as \( n \to \infty \) by the LDCT. It follows that

\[
\lim_{n \to \infty} E[\left\{ (X(\tau) - X(\tau \wedge T_{-n})) \right\}] = 0,
\]

whence \( E[X(\tau)] = \lim_{n \to \infty} E[X(\tau \wedge T_{-n})] = E[X(0)] + \mu E[\tau] \). The upshot is that the longer you wait to stop, the more you will lose in expectation.

**Example:** If \( \langle X(t) \rangle \) is standard Brownian motion, then \( \langle X(t)^2 - t \rangle \) is a martingale. Indeed, for \( s < t \) we have

\[
E[X(t)^2 - t \mid \langle X(u)^2 - u \rangle ; 0 \leq u \leq s] = E[E[X(t)^2 - t \mid \langle X(u) ; 0 \leq u \leq s \rangle] \mid \langle X(u)^2 - u \rangle ; 0 \leq u \leq s] = E[E[(X(t) - X(s) + X(s))^2 - t \mid \langle X(u) ; 0 \leq u \leq s \rangle] \mid \langle X(u)^2 - u \rangle ; 0 \leq u \leq s] = E[(t - s) + X(s)^2 - t \mid \langle X(u)^2 \rangle ; 0 \leq u \leq s] = X(s)^2 - s.
\]

Note that if \( \tau \) is a stopping time and \( u > 0 \), then \( \tau \wedge u \) is also a stopping time: ...

**Corollary.** For standard Brownian motion, \( E[T_1 \wedge T_{-1}] = 1 \).

**Proof.** Let \( \tau := T_1 \wedge T_{-1} = T_{\{1, -1\}} \). Then \( \forall t \)

\[
E[X(\tau \wedge t)^2 - \tau \wedge t] = E[X(0)^2 - 0] = 0,
\]

i.e.,

\[
E[\tau \wedge t] = E[X(\tau \wedge t)^2].
\]

By the MCT and the BCT, \( E[\tau] = E[X(\tau)^2] = E[1] = 1 \).
We can get easily a new proof that for standard Brownian motion, \(P[T_a < T_{-b}] = b/(a + b)\) \((a, b > 0)\). For if \(p := P[T_a < T_{-b}]\) and \(\tau := T_a \wedge T_{-b}\), we have

\[
0 = E[X(\tau)] = ap - b(1 - p).
\]

Now we prove that the strategy we used to stop a Brownian motion \(X(\cdot)\) with negative drift \(\mu\) at a time \(T\) in order to maximize \(R := E_0[X(T) ; T < \infty]\) is indeed the best one. Recall that we used \(T := T_\lambda\), where \(\lambda := -\sigma^2/(2\mu)\), for which we had \(R = \lambda/e\). Recall also that \(\max X(t) \sim \text{Exp}(1/\lambda)\). Let \(T\) be any stopping time (with \(X(T) \geq 0\)). Given \(a > 0\), define \(\tau := T \wedge T_a\), \(p_a := P_0[\tau < \infty]\), and \(R_a := E_0[X(\tau) ; \tau < \infty]\). A proof similar to the solution of Exercise 87 tells us that

\[
E_0\left[\exp\left\{X(\tau \wedge T_{-b})/\lambda\right\}\right] = 1
\]

for every \(b > 0\). The BCT allows us to take \(b \to \infty \ldots\) and obtain

\[
E_0\left[\exp\left\{X(\tau)/\lambda\right\} ; \tau < \infty\right] = 1,
\]

i.e.,

\[
E_0\left[\exp\left\{X(\tau)/\lambda\right\} \mid \tau < \infty\right] p_a = 1.
\]

Now convexity of the exponential (Jensen’s inequality) \ldots yields

\[
E_0\left[\exp\left\{X(\tau)/\lambda\right\} \mid \tau < \infty\right] \geq \exp\left\{E_0\left[X(\tau)/\lambda \mid \tau < \infty\right]\right\} = e^{R_a/(p_a\lambda)}.
\]

Putting these together, we arrive at

\[
1 \geq p_a e^{R_a/(p_a\lambda)},
\]

whence

\[
\frac{R_a}{p_a} e^{-R_a/(p_a\lambda)} \geq R_a.
\]

Since \(\max_{x \geq 0} xe^{-x/\lambda} = \lambda/e\), we arrive at the inequality \(R_a \leq \lambda/e\). Since \(0 \leq X(T) \leq \max X(t)\), which has finite expectation, the LDCT shows that \(\lim_{a \to \infty} R_a = R, \ldots\) whence also \(R \leq \lambda/e\), as desired.

Furthermore, examination of the equality condition in Jensen’s inequality shows that the only stopping time that achieves \(R = \lambda/e\) is the one we used, \(T_\lambda\). We sketch the proof. It suffices to show that if \(R = \lambda/e\), then \(T = T_c\) for some \(c\), by our earlier calculation. Suppose \(T\) does not have this form. Then \(P[|X(T) - E[X(T)]| > 2\lambda e^' | T < \infty] > 2\varepsilon\) for
some $\epsilon, \epsilon' > 0$, whence $P[|X(\tau) - E[X(\tau)]| > \lambda\epsilon' \mid \tau < \infty] > \epsilon$ for all large $a$ (as before, $\tau := T \wedge T_a$). We now look at a more refined version of Jensen’s inequality. There is some $\delta > 0$ such that $e^t \geq 1 + t + \delta 1_{\{|t| > \epsilon'\}}$, whence for any random variable $Y$ with mean 0, we have

$$E[e^Y] \geq 1 + \delta P[|Y| > \epsilon'].$$

Use $Y := (X(\tau) - E_0[X(\tau) \mid \tau < \infty])/\lambda$ conditional on $\tau < \infty$ to get

$$E_0\left[\exp\left\{X(\tau)/\lambda\right\} \mid \tau < \infty\right] \geq \exp\left\{E_0[X(\tau)/\lambda \mid \tau < \infty]\right\} (1 + \delta\epsilon) = e^{R_a/(p_a\lambda)} (1 + \delta\epsilon).$$

Then proceeding as before yields $R_a \leq \lambda/(e(1 + \delta\epsilon))$, whence the same holds for $R$, a contradiction.
§9.1. Stochastically Larger.

Given two random variables $X$ and $Y$, we say that $X$ is \textit{stochastically larger} than $Y$, written $X \succcurlyeq Y$, if $F_X \geq F_Y$. We have seen this in connection with renewal processes (Exercise 30). Also, $X \succcurlyeq Y$ iff $\forall a \ P[X \geq a] \geq P[Y \geq a]$ (Exercise 89). If we decompose $X$ and $Y$ into their positive and negative parts, $X = X^+ - X^-$, $Y = Y^+ - Y^-$, then

$$X \succcurlyeq Y \iff X^+ \succcurlyeq Y^+ \text{ and } X^- \preceq Y^-$$

(Exercise 89).

\textbf{Lemma 9.1.1.} If $X \succcurlyeq Y$, then $E[X] \geq E[Y]$ when both $E[X]$ and $E[Y]$ are defined in $[-\infty, \infty]$.

\textit{Proof.} If $X,Y \geq 0$, then $E[X] = \int_0^\infty F_X(a) \, da \geq \int_0^\infty F_Y(a) \, da = E[Y]$. Thus, $E[X^+] \geq E[Y^+]$ and $E[X^-] \leq E[Y^-]$, so $E[X] = E[X^+] - E[X^-] \geq E[Y^+] = E[Y^-] = E[Y]$. \hfill \qed

\textbf{Proposition 9.1.2.} $X \succcurlyeq Y$ iff for all increasing $f: \mathbb{R} \to \mathbb{R}$, we have $E[f(X)] \geq E[f(Y)]$ when both expectations are defined in $[-\infty, \infty]$.

\textit{Proof.} $\iff$: Let $f := 1_{(a,\infty)}$, $a \in \mathbb{R}$.

$\implies$: (The proof in the book is incorrect unless $f$ is continuous.) By the lemma, it suffices to show that $f(X) \succcurlyeq f(Y)$. Set

$$I_f(a) := \{x; \ f(x) > a\}.$$ 

Then $I_f(a)$ is an interval of the form $(s,\infty)$ or $[s,\infty)$ and $f(X) > a \iff X \in I_f(a)$, whence

$$P[f(X) > a] = P[X \in I_f(a)] \geq P[Y \in I_f(a)] = P[f(Y) > a].$$ \hfill \qed
§9.2. Coupling.

Coupling refers generally to creating a new pair of random variables \((X^*, Y^*)\) out of given random variables \(X\) and \(Y\) such that \(X^*\) and \(Y^*\) are defined on the same probability space as each other, yet still \(X^* \overset{D}= X\) and \(Y^* \overset{D}= Y\). Usually one wants to get the new pair to have some special properties. Often, this is used to convert distributional properties to more direct comparisons of random variables. We will use the following kind of inverse to a c.d.f., \(F\):

\[
F^{-1}(s) := \inf \{x \mid F(x) \geq s\} = \min \{x \mid F(x) \geq s\}.
\]

2" ... Note that \(F^{-1}(s) \leq y\) iff \(F(y) \geq s\). ...

**PROPOSITION.** Let \(F\) be a c.d.f. If \(U \sim \text{Unif}[0, 1]\), then \(F^{-1}(U) \sim F\).

**Proof.** For every \(y \in \mathbb{R}\), we have

\[
P[F^{-1}(U) \leq y] = P[F(y) \geq U] = F(y).
\]

**PROPOSITION 9.2.2.** \(X \succeq Y\) iff there exist random variables \(X^*\) and \(Y^*\) with \(X^* \overset{D}= X\), \(Y^* \overset{D}= Y\), and \(X^* \geq Y^*\).

This makes Proposition 9.1.2 obvious.

**Proof.** \(\iff\): We have for all \(a\),

\[
P[X > a] = P[X^* > a] \geq P[Y^* > a] = P[Y > a].
\]

\(\implies\): Let \(U \sim \text{Unif}[0, 1]\). Define \(X^* := F_X^{-1}(U)\) and \(Y^* := F_Y^{-1}(U)\). By the preceding proposition, \(X^* \overset{D}= X\) and \(Y^* \overset{D}= Y\). Since \(F_X \leq F_Y\), we have \(F_X^{-1} \geq F_Y^{-1}\), ... which gives the result.

1" Example: If \(n_1 \geq n_2\) and \(p_1 \geq p_2\), then \(\text{Bin}(n_1, p_1) \succeq \text{Bin}(n_2, p_2)\). ...

**Example 9.2(b).** \(\text{Pois}(\lambda)\) is stochastically increasing in \(\lambda\): This is not hard to show by analytic calculation, but here is a coupling proof: Let \(\lambda < \mu\), \(X \sim \text{Pois}(\mu)\), and \(Y \sim \text{Bin}(X, \lambda/\mu)\). Then \(Y \leq X\) and \(Y \sim \text{Pois}(\mu \cdot \frac{\lambda}{\mu})\).
§9.2.2. Exponential Convergence in Markov Chains.

Recall that if \( \langle X_n \mid n \geq 0 \rangle \) is a finite-state irreducible aperiodic Markov chain, then for all \( i \) and \( j \), we have \( p^{(n)}_{ij} \to \pi_j \), the stationary probabilities. How fast is the convergence? We show that it is exponential; an active area of research involves estimating the precise rate for various Markov chains on large state spaces.

**Theorem.** Let \( \langle X_n \mid n \geq 0 \rangle \) be a finite-state irreducible aperiodic Markov chain and \( \pi_j \) be the stationary probabilities. Then \( \exists \ c > 0, \ \beta < 1 \) such that \( \forall n, i, j \ |p^{(n)}_{ij} - \pi_j| \leq c \beta^n \).

**Proof.** By Exercise 4.14, \( \pi_j > 0 \) for all \( j \). Thus, by our recollection above, \( \exists N \ \forall i, j \ p^{(N)}_{ij} > 0 \). Let \( \varepsilon := \min_{i,j} p^{(N)}_{ij} \). Let \( \langle X'_n \mid n \geq 0 \rangle \) be an independent Markov chain with the same transition probabilities, but with the stationary distribution used as the initial distribution. Let’s take \( X_0 \equiv i \). Define

\[
T := \inf \{ n \mid X_n = X'_n \}
\]

and set

\[
\overline{X}_n := \begin{cases} X_n & \text{if } n \leq T, \\ X'_n & \text{if } n \geq T. \end{cases}
\]

Then \( \overline{X}_n \) is a Markov chain with the same distribution as \( X_n \), as we’ll verify. Since \( [\overline{X}_n \neq X'_n] \subseteq [T > n] \), we have

\[
|p^{(n)}_{ij} - \pi_j| = |P[\overline{X}_n = j] - P[X'_n = j]| \leq P[\overline{X}_n \neq X'_n] \leq P[T > n].
\]

... Thus, it remains to bound \( P[T > n] \).

Now by choice of \( N \), we have \( P[X_N = X'_N] \geq P[X_N = j = X'_N] \geq \varepsilon^2 \) (for any \( j \)) and, in fact,

\[
P[X_{kN} = X'_{kN} \mid X_0, X'_0, X_N, X'_N, \ldots, X_{(k-1)N}, X'_{(k-1)N}] \geq \varepsilon^2,
\]

whence \( P[T > kN] \leq (1 - \varepsilon^2)^k \). ... This proves the result. ...

It remains to verify that \( \langle \overline{X}_n \rangle \) is a Markov chain with the same distribution as \( \langle X_n \rangle \). Consider \( Z_n := (X_n, X'_n) \). This is clearly a Markov chain. Furthermore, \( T \) is a stopping time for it. If we define \( Z'_n := (X'_n, X_n) \), then the Markov property implies that given \( T = t \) and \( Z_T = (j,j) \), the distribution of \( \langle Z_{T+k} \mid k \geq 0 \rangle \) equals the distribution of \( \langle Z'_{T+k} \mid k \geq 0 \rangle \). Hence the same is true given \( T = t \), which means that if we define

\[
\mathcal{Z}_n := \begin{cases} Z_n & \text{if } n \leq T, \\ Z'_n & \text{if } n \geq T, \end{cases}
\]

then \( \langle \mathcal{Z}_n \rangle \) has the same distribution as \( \langle Z_n \rangle \). Looking at the first coordinates of these processes gives what we wanted.
Homework Problems

Note that while problems from the book are reproduced here, there is often information in the back of the book that is not reproduced here.

Exercise not to Hand In: Based on experience from similar oil fields, an oil executive has determined that the probability that a certain oil field contains a significant quantity of oil is 0.6. Before drilling, she orders a seismological test for further information. This test is not 100% accurate; if there is a significant quantity of oil, then the test confirms this with probability 0.9, but if there is not a significant quantity, then it confirms that with probability 0.8. Suppose that the seismological test does say that there is a significant quantity of oil. What should the executive now estimate as the probability of a significant quantity of oil?

Exercise not to Hand In: Five communication towers are erected in a straight line, each exactly 8 miles from its neighbors. The signal from each tower travels 16.6 miles. Assume that on a given day, the communication equipment in each tower is broken with probability 0.002, independently of each other. If it is not broken, then it transmits each signal that it receives. What is the probability that a signal from the first tower reaches the fifth tower?

Exercise not to Hand In: What is the median of an Exp(\(\lambda\)) distribution? Why is this called “half-life” in radioactive decay?

Exercise not to Hand In: Suppose that the joint density of \(X, Y\) is

\[
f(x, y) = \begin{cases} cx^2y^2 & \text{if } x \geq 0, y \geq 0, x + y \leq 1, \\ 0 & \text{otherwise}. \end{cases}
\]

What is the value of \(c\)? What is \(E[X]\)? What is \(E[XY]\)?
1. p. 47, 1.8: Let $X_1$ and $X_2$ be independent Poisson random variables with means $\lambda_1$ and $\lambda_2$.
   (a) Find the distribution of $X_1 + X_2$.
   (b) Compute the conditional distribution of $X_1$ given that $X_1 + X_2 = n$.
      (Note that both answers involve named distributions.)

2. p. 48, 1.11: If $X$ is a nonnegative integer-valued random variable then the function $P(z)$, defined for $|z| \leq 1$ by
   \[ P(z) = E\left[z^X\right] = \sum_{j=0}^{\infty} z^j P[X = j], \]
   is called the probability generating function of $X$.
   (a) Show that
   \[ \frac{d^k}{dz^k} P(z)|_{z=0} = k! P[X = k]. \]
   (b) With 0 being considered even, show that
   \[ P[X \text{ is even}] = \frac{P(-1) + P(1)}{2}. \]
   (c) If $X$ is binomial with parameters $n$ and $p$, show that
   \[ P[X \text{ is even}] = \frac{1 + (1 - 2p)^n}{2}. \]
   (d) If $X$ is Poisson with mean $\lambda$, show that
   \[ P[X \text{ is even}] = \frac{1 + e^{-2\lambda}}{2}. \]
   (e) If $X$ is geometric with parameter $p$, show that
   \[ P[X \text{ is even}] = \frac{1 - p}{2 - p}. \]
   (f) If $X$ is a negative binomial random variable with parameters $r$ and $p$, show that
   \[ P[X \text{ is even}] = \frac{1}{2} \left[ 1 + (-1)^r \left( \frac{p}{2 - p} \right)^r \right]. \]

3. Show that if $X, Y$ have a joint density $f_{X,Y}$, then $X$ has the density
   \[ f_X(x) = \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} f_{X,Y}(x, y) \, dy. \]
4. p. 46, 1.1: Let $N$ denote a nonnegative integer-valued random variable. Show that

$$E[N] = \sum_{k=1}^{\infty} P[N \geq k] = \sum_{k=0}^{\infty} P[N > k].$$

In general show that if $X$ is nonnegative with distribution $F$, then

$$E[X] = \int_{0}^{\infty} F(x) \, dx$$

and

$$E[X^n] = \int_{0}^{\infty} nx^{n-1} F(x) \, dx.$$

5. Suppose that $U$ is a Unif[0,1]-random variable. Given the value of $U$, say, $U = u$, another random experiment is made to get the value of $X$ so that $X$ has a Exp($u$) distribution (i.e., an exponential random variable with parameter $u$; note that it is not true that $X = e^U$). Compute the density of $X$.

6. Let $X$ be a nonnegative random variable with c.d.f. $F$ and $c$ a positive constant. Show that

$$E[\min\{X, c\}] = \int_{0}^{c} F(x) \, dx$$

and, if $F(c) > 0$,

$$E[X \mid X \leq c] = \int_{0}^{c} \left[ 1 - \frac{F(x)}{F(c)} \right] \, dx.$$

7. p. 46, 1.3: Let $X_n$ denote a binomial random variable with parameters $(n, p_n)$, $n \geq 1$. If $np_n \to \lambda$ as $n \to \infty$, show that

$$P[X_n = i] \to e^{-\lambda} \lambda^i / i! \quad \text{as } n \to \infty.$$

Here, $\lambda < \infty$. Show that if $\lambda = \infty$, then $P[X_n = i] \to 0$ as $n \to \infty$, perhaps by comparing to the case of finite $\lambda$.

(The last part was added. Show all this directly, not by using the Poisson Convergence Theorem.)

8. p. 50, 1.18: A coin, which lands on heads with probability $p$, is continually flipped. Compute the expected number of flips that are made until a string of $r$ heads in a row is obtained. *Hint*: Condition on the number of flips until the first tail appears.
9. p. 53, 1.30: In Example 1.6(A) if server $i$ serves at an exponential rate $\lambda_i$, $i = 1, 2$, compute the probability that Mr. A is the last one out.

10. p. 53, 1.31: If $X$ and $Y$ are independent exponential random variables with respective means $1/\lambda_1$ and $1/\lambda_2$, compute the distribution of $Z = \min(X, Y)$. What is the conditional distribution of $Z$ given $Z = X$?

Exercise not to Hand In: p. 53, 1.34

11. Let $X$ and $Y$ be independent $\text{Exp}(\lambda)$ random variables. Find the distribution of $|X - Y|$. (Hint: there is a short solution that needs hardly any calculation.)

12. Consider again the two teams of gladiators. At each round, each team sends one of its gladiators to battle. When two fight, the probability of winning is proportional to the strength of a gladiator. The loser never plays again. In this variant, however, the winning gladiator inherits the strength of the loser. Show that each team wins with probability proportional to its total strength, regardless of order. (Hint: induct on the total number of gladiators.)

13. Suppose that the lifetime of a machine is an $\text{Exp}(\lambda)$ random variable. The machine is checked to see whether it is operating at regular intervals, namely, at times $s$, $2s$, $3s$, etc., for some fixed $s > 0$. Eventually, of course, the machine is discovered to be down. In terms of $\lambda$ and $s$, what is the expected duration of the time that the machine is actually down before it is discovered to be down?

14. A component has an exponentially distributed lifetime with mean 750 hours. When it fails, it is replaced in the machine by a new component with an independent lifetime of the same distribution. What is the smallest number of spares that should be provided in order that the machine last for 2000 hours (using the original component and these spares only) with probability at least 95%?

15. You want to cross a road at a spot where cars pass according to a Poisson process with rate $\lambda$. You begin to cross as soon as you see there will not be any cars passing for the next $c$ time units. Let $N :=$ number of cars that pass before you cross, $T :=$ time you begin to cross.
   (a) What is $E[N]$?
   (b) Find $E[T]$, for example, by conditioning on $N$. 
16. p. 89, 2.5: Suppose that \( \{N_1(t), t \geq 0\} \) and \( \{N_2(t), t \geq 0\} \) are independent Poisson processes with rates \( \lambda_1 \) and \( \lambda_2 \). Show that \( \{N_1(t) + N_2(t), t \geq 0\} \) is a Poisson process with rate \( \lambda_1 + \lambda_2 \). Also, show that the probability that the first event of the combined process comes from \( \{N_1(t), t \geq 0\} \) is \( \lambda_1 / (\lambda_1 + \lambda_2) \), independently of the time of the event. (Note that this last statement means that the probability that the first event comes from \( N_1(\cdot) \) given that the time of the first event is \( t \) is equal to \( \lambda_1 / (\lambda_1 + \lambda_2) \) for all \( t > 0 \).)

State and prove the analogue for any finite number of independent Poisson processes, not just for two processes.

Exercise not to Hand In: p. 90, 2.8

17. p. 91, 2.14: Consider an elevator that starts in the basement and travels upward. Let \( N_i \) denote the number of people that get in the elevator at floor \( i \). Assume the \( N_i \) are independent and that \( N_i \) is Poisson with mean \( \lambda_i \). Each person entering at \( i \) will, independently of everything else, get off at \( j \) with probability \( P_{ij} \), where \( \sum_{j > i} P_{ij} = 1 \).

Let \( O_j \) = number of people getting off the elevator at floor \( j \).
(a) Compute \( E[O_j] \).
(b) What is the distribution of \( O_j \)?
(c) What is the joint distribution of \( O_j \) and \( O_k \)?
   (The solution needs more explanation than what appears in the back of the book!)

18. Let \( T \sim \text{Exp}(\lambda) \) and \( M \sim \text{Pois}(\mu T) \) given \( T \). Use classified Poisson processes to calculate the unconditional distribution of \( M \).

19. There are \( n \) radioactive particles in a substance at time 0. Their lifetimes are i.i.d. \( \text{Exp}(\lambda) \). Let \( X(t) \) be the number of particles that have decayed by time \( t \).
   (a) What is \( P[X(t) = k] \)?
   (b) Let \( T \) be the first time \( t \) that \( X(t) = k \). What is \( E[T] \)?

20. A machine needs 2 types of parts to work, type A and type B. It has one part of each type to begin, and there are also 2 spare A parts and 1 spare B part. When a part fails, it is replaced by a spare part of the same type, if available, instantaneously. Suppose that the lifetimes (time in service) of all parts are independent; parts of type A are \( \text{Exp}(\lambda) \)-distributed, while parts of type B are \( \text{Exp}(\mu) \)-distributed. What is the expected time until the machine fails for lack of a needed part?
21. Customers arrive at a store according to a Poisson process of rate $\lambda$/hr. Each customer spends a time in the store that is a random variable with $\text{Exp}(\alpha$/hr) distribution, independent of other customer times, and then departs. Given that exactly five customers arrive in the first hour, what is the probability that the store is empty of customers at the end of this first hour?

22. Let $N_i(\cdot) (i = 1, 2)$ be independent Poisson processes with rates $\lambda_i$. Let $X$ be the result of a fair coin flip that is independent of both processes $N_i(\cdot)$. Suppose that $N(t) = N_1(t)$ for all $t$ if $X = H$, while $N(t) = N_2(t)$ for all $t$ if $X = T$. (There is only one coin flip.)
   (a) Does $N(\cdot)$ have stationary increments?
   (b) Does $N(\cdot)$ have independent increments?
   (c) Is $N(\cdot)$ a simple counting process?
   (d) Is $N(\cdot)$ a Poisson process?

23. p. 94, 2.30: Let $T_1, T_2, \ldots$ denote the interarrival times of events of a nonhomogeneous Poisson process having intensity function $\lambda(t)$. Assume that $\int_0^\infty \lambda(t) \, dt = \infty$.
   (a) Are the $T_i$ independent?
   (b) Are the $T_i$ identically distributed?
   (c) Find the distribution of $T_1$.
   (d) Find the distribution of $T_2$.
   (e) What are the failure rates of $T_1$ and $T_2$?

   Note: part (e) was added.

24. p. 95, 2.33: Consider a two-dimensional Poisson point process with intensity $\lambda$. Given a fixed point, let $X$ denote the distance from that point to its nearest event, where distance is measured in the usual Euclidean manner. Let $R_i, i \geq 1$, denote the distance from that point to the $i$th closest event to it. Put $R_0 := 0$. Show that:
   (a) $P[X > t] = e^{-\lambda \pi t^2}$.
   (b) $E[X] = 1/(2\sqrt{\lambda})$.
   (c) $\pi R_i^2 - \pi R_{i-1}^2, i \geq 1$, are independent exponential random variables, each with rate $\lambda$.
   (d) Let $N(r)$ be the number of points of the Poisson point process in $\mathbb{R}^2$ that are within distance $r$ of the origin. Describe the law of the counting process $N(\cdot)$ on $[0, \infty)$.

   Note: part (d) was added. Also, $X = R_1$. 

25. p. 153, 3.1: Is it true that:
   (a) \( N(t) < n \) if and only if \( S_n > t \)?
   (b) \( N(t) \leq n \) if and only if \( S_n \geq t \)?
   (c) \( N(t) > n \) if and only if \( S_n < t \)?

   Note: \( N(\cdot) \) is a renewal process with arrival times \( S_n \).

26. Suppose that the interarrival distribution for a renewal process is \( \text{Pois}(\mu) \) (so the interarrival times are discrete, but the renewal process is defined for continuous time).
   (a) Find the distribution of \( S_n \) for each \( n \).
   (b) Find the distribution of \( N(t) \) for all \( t \).

27. Betsy is a consultant. Each time she gets a job to do, it lasts 3 months on average. The time between jobs is exponentially distributed with mean 2 weeks. At what rate does Betsy start new jobs in the long run?

28. Let \( N_1(\cdot) \) and \( N_2(\cdot) \) be independent renewal processes, both with interarrival times \( \text{Unif}[0, 1] \). Define \( N(t) := N_1(t) + N_2(t) \) for all \( t \).
   (a) Are the interarrival times of \( N(\cdot) \) independent?
   (b) Are the interarrival times of \( N(\cdot) \) identically distributed?
   (c) Is \( N(\cdot) \) a renewal process?

29. Let \( U_k \sim \text{Unif}[0, 1] \) be independent random variables. Define \( N := \min\{n; \sum_{k=1}^{n} U_k > 1\} \). What is \( E[N] \)?

30. Let \( N(\cdot) \) be a renewal process. Show that \( \forall x, t \geq 0 \) \( P[X_{N(t)+1} > x] \geq F_X(x) \).
    Compute both sides exactly when \( N(\cdot) \) is a Poisson process of rate \( \lambda \). (Hint: Condition on \( N(t) \) and \( S_{N(t)} \).)

31. p. 154, 3.6: Let \( N(\cdot) \) be a renewal process and suppose that for all \( n \) and \( t \), conditional on the event that \( N(t) = n \), the event times \( S_1, \ldots, S_n \) are distributed as the order statistics of a set of independent uniform \((0, t)\) random variables. Show that \( N(\cdot) \) is a Poisson process.

   Note: do not use the hint given because that requires solving the preceding problem. Besides, it will be more interesting if you do it directly.
32. Events occur according to a Poisson process with rate $\lambda$. Any event that occurs within a time $d$ of the event that immediately preceded it is called a $d$-event. For instance, if $d = 1$ and events occur at times 2, 2.8, 4, 6, 6.6, $\ldots$, then the events at times 2.8 and 6.6 would be $d$-events.

(a) At what (long-run) rate do $d$-events occur?
(b) What (long-run) proportion of all events are $d$-events?

33. p. 156, 3.14: Let $A(t)$ and $Y(t)$ denote the age and excess at $t$ of a renewal process. Fill in the missing terms:

(a) $A(t) \geq x \leftrightarrow$ 0 events in the interval _______.
(b) $Y(t) > x \leftrightarrow$ 0 events in the interval _______.
(c) $P[Y(t) > x] = P[A(\cdot) \geq x]$.
(d) Compute the joint distribution of $A(t)$ and $Y(t)$ for a Poisson process.

Note: $\leftrightarrow$ means “if and only if”. In (a) and (c), I changed each $>$ associated to $A(\cdot)$ to $\geq$. Of course, you must explain your answers. All blanks should be filled in with deterministic numbers, not anything random.

34. For a random variable $X$, write $\hat{X}$ for a size-biased random variable corresponding to $X$. Show that if $X \sim \text{Bin}(n,p)$, then $\hat{X} - 1 \sim \text{Bin}(n - 1, p)$, while if $X \sim \text{Pois}(\lambda)$, then $\hat{X} - 1 \sim \text{Pois}(\lambda)$.

35. Consider a nonlattice renewal process $N(\cdot)$ with interarrival times $X_k \sim F$ having finite mean, $\mu$. We argued heuristically that $\lim_{t \to \infty} P[X_{N(t)+1} \leq x] = P[\hat{X} \leq x]$ for all $x \geq 0$, among other things, to explain the key renewal theorem, where $\hat{X}$ has the size-biased distribution corresponding to $F$. Use the key renewal theorem to prove this limit statement.

36. Consider a nonlattice renewal process $N(\cdot)$ with interarrival times $X_k \sim F$ having finite mean, $\mu$, and finite variance, $\sigma^2$. Show that $\lim_{t \to \infty} (m(t) - t/\mu) = \sigma^2/(2\mu^2) - 1/2$.

37.

(a) Suppose that $X$ and $Y$ are i.i.d. (real) random variables and $g$ is a nondecreasing function. Assume that $E[|X| + |g(X)|] < \infty$. Show that $E[(X-Y)(g(X)-g(Y))] \geq 0$. Deduce that $E[Xg(X)] \geq E[X]E[g(X)]$.
(b) Let $X \sim F$ be a nonnegative random variable with finite, positive mean. It follows from Exercise 30 and Exercise 35 that the c.d.f. of $\hat{X}$ is at most $F$. Prove this directly from part (a).
38. p. 157, 3.20: Consider successive flips of a fair coin.
(a) Compute the mean number of flips until the pattern HHTHHTT appears.
(b) Which pattern requires a larger expected time to occur: HHTT or HTHT?

39. A coin has probability \( p \) of H. What is \( E[\text{time to THTHTHTHT}] \)?

40. p. 154, 3.9(c): Consider a single-server bank in which potential customers arrive at a Poisson rate \( \lambda \). However, an arrival enters the bank only if the server is free when he or she arrives. Let \( G \) denote the service distribution. Note: the system capacity is 1, so any customer who arrives while the server is busy is lost.
(c) What fraction of time is the server busy?

41. A particular ski slope has \( n \) skiers continually and independently climbing up and skiing down. The times it takes skiers to climb up or ski down are independent of each other and non-lattice, but not identically distributed. In fact, the time it takes the \( i \)th skier to climb up has distribution \( F_i \) each time and the time it takes her to ski down has distribution \( G_i \) each time. All \( F_i \) and \( G_i \) have finite means.
(a) If \( N(t) \) denotes the total number of times that the members of this ski group have skied down the slope by time \( t \), summed over all \( n \) members, what are \( \lim_{t \to \infty} N(t)/t \) a.s. and \( \lim_{t \to \infty} E[N(t)]/t \)?
(b) If \( U(t) \) denotes the number of skiers that are climbing up the hill at time \( t \), what is \( \lim_{t \to \infty} E[U(t)] \)?

42. p. 160, 3.31: A system consisting of four components is said to work whenever both at least one of components 1 and 2 works and at least one of components 3 and 4 works. Suppose that component \( i \) alternates between working and being failed in accordance with a nonlattice alternating renewal process with distributions \( F_i \) and \( G_i \), \( i = 1, 2, 3, 4 \). If these alternating renewal processes are independent, find \( \lim_{t \to \infty} P[\text{system is working at time } t] \).

43. Consider an alternating renewal process where \( Z + Y \) has finite mean and a lattice distribution with period \( d \). For \( 0 \leq u < d \), show that
\[
\lim_{n \to \infty} P[\text{system is on at time } u + nd] = \frac{d \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} P[Z > u + nd]}{E[Z] + E[Y]} .
\]
With \( I(t) \) denoting the indicator that the system is on at time \( t \), show that
\[
\lim_{t \to \infty} E\left[ \frac{1}{t} \int_0^t I(s) \, ds \right] = \frac{E[Z]}{E[Z] + E[Y]} .
\]
Hint: Follow the proof of Theorem 3.4.4 and use \( g(s) := \frac{1}{F_{Z+Y}(s)} \).
44. Show that the long-run expected proportion of time that $X_{N(t)+1} \leq c$ is $\int_0^c [F(c) - F(x)] dx / E[X]$ for a renewal process with $X_n \sim F$, where $F$ has finite mean.

45. In Example 3.4(a), find the long-run rate of restocking.

46. Suppose that $X_1, X_2, \ldots$ are the inter-renewal times of an equilibrium renewal process, where $X_2, X_3, \ldots$ each are equal to 1 or $\sqrt{2}$ with equal probability. Does $X_1$ have a density? If so, what is it? If not, why not?

47. Let $X_n$ be the lifetimes of items assumed i.i.d. with c.d.f. $F$. Items are replaced when they reach age $T$ if they have not yet failed. Find an $F$ and $T$ such that the actual failure rate when planned replacements are made is greater than that without planned replacement.

48. A warehouse stores and sells items. Customers arrive according to a Poisson process of rate 2 per day. Each customer demands exactly one item. The warehouse gives an item to a customer when it has one, but turns away the customer otherwise. The warehouse orders $A$ more items from the supplier when the warehouse becomes empty, but it takes a random amount of time for the order to arrive; the order time has a mean of 3 days. Each such order costs the warehouse $50 (regardless of the size of the order). Each item costs the warehouse $1 per day to store. The supplier charges $70 per item, but the warehouse sells each item for $80.

   (a) What is the long-run profit per day made by the warehouse?
   (b) What value of $A$ maximizes the long-run profit per day?

   (A more realistic scenario would involve ordering more items before the warehouse becomes empty, but this is much harder to analyze.)

49. Let $Q(t)$ denote the number of customers in the system of an M/G/1/2 queue. Assume that $G$ has finite mean and the arrival rate is $\lambda$. Show that in the long run, the proportion of time that $Q(t) = 1$ is

$$\frac{\int_0^\infty e^{-\lambda x} G(x) dx}{\int_0^\infty (e^{-\lambda x} G(x) + G(x)) dx}.$$ 

50. Consider an M/G/1/2 queue. Let $X_n :=$ the number of customers in the system when the $n$th customer leaves the system, $X_0 := 0$. What are the transition probabilities of this Markov chain?
51. p. 219, 4.4: Show that

\[ p_{ij}^{(n)} = \sum_{k=0}^{n} \binom{n}{k} p_{jj}^{(n-k)}. \]

52. p. 221, 4.12: A transition probability matrix $P$ is said to be doubly stochastic if

\[ \sum_{i} P_{ij} = 1 \quad \text{for all } j. \]

That is, the column sums all equal 1. If a doubly stochastic chain has $n$ states and is ergodic, calculate its limiting probabilities. (Note: “ergodic” means that the Markov chain with this transition matrix is irreducible, aperiodic, and positive recurrent.)

**Exercise not to Hand In:** p. 221, 4.16, 4.17

53. Suppose you have a deck of $n$ cards. You shuffle them in the following simple manner: A card is chosen at random and put on the top. This is repeated many times, where the card chosen each time is independent of the preceding choices. Show that in the long run, the deck is perfectly shuffled in the sense that all $n!$ orderings are equally likely.

54. You have 3 coins, each with different probability of H. Namely, coin $k$ has chance $(k+1)/(k+2)$ of coming up H ($k = 0, 1, 2$). The coins are tossed repeatedly in the following fashion. Coin 0 is tossed the first two times, but thereafter, coin $k$ is tossed at time $n$ when the number of H in tosses $n-1$ and $n-2$ is equal to $k$. What is the limiting probability that the $n$th coin comes up H as $n \to \infty$? *Hint:* Use a 4-state Markov chain.

55. We want to decide whether Brand A special high-intensity lightbulbs last longer than Brand B special high-intensity lightbulbs by making the following test. We turn on one bulb of each brand simultaneously and wait until one of the two fails. The brand whose bulb lasts longer gets a point. Then we repeat with new lightbulbs from each brand. We continue this test until one brand has accumulated 5 points more than the other brand. What is the chance that the test picks the better brand given that in fact the lifetimes of bulbs of Brand A are exponential with mean 25 hours while those of Brand B are exponential with mean 30 hours? *Hint:* Consider the difference between the numbers of points that each brand has accumulated.
56. p. 224, 4.27: Consider a particle that moves along a set of \( m + 1 \) nodes, labeled 0, 1, \( \ldots, m \). At each move it either goes one step in the clockwise direction with probability \( p \) or one step in the counterclockwise direction with probability \( 1 - p \). It continues moving until all the nodes 1, 2, \( \ldots, m \) have been visited at least once. Starting at node 0, find the probability that node \( i \) is the last node visited, \( i = 1, \ldots, m \).

57. p. 223, 4.23: In the gambler’s ruin problem show that

\[
P[\text{she wins the next gamble | present fortune is } i, \text{ she eventually reaches } N] = \begin{cases} 
    p[1 - (q/p)^{i+1}]/[1 - (q/p)^i] & \text{if } p \neq \frac{1}{2}, \\
    (i + 1)/2i & \text{if } p = \frac{1}{2}.
\end{cases}
\]

58. p. 226, 4.33: Given that \( \{X_n, n \geq 0\} \) is a branching process:

(a) Argue that either \( X_n \) converges to 0 or to infinity.

(b) Show that

\[
\text{Var}(X_n \mid X_0 = 1) = \begin{cases} 
    \sigma^2 \mu^{n-1} \frac{\mu^n - 1}{\mu - 1} & \text{if } \mu \neq 1, \\
    n\sigma^2 & \text{if } \mu = 1.
\end{cases}
\]

Note: assume that \( p_1 \neq 1 \). Also, part (a) is asking about the a.s. behavior of \( X_n \).

59. Suppose that in a branching process, the number of offspring per individual has a binomial distribution with parameters \( (2, p) \), where \( 0 < p < 1 \). If the process starts with a single individual (generation 0), calculate:

(a) the probability of eventual extinction;

(b) the probability that the population becomes extinct for the first time in the second generation (i.e., the second generation is the earliest generation that has no individuals).

60. Consider a random walk on a network \( G \) that is either transient or is stopped on the first visit to a set of vertices \( Z \). Let \( G(x, y) \) be the corresponding Green function, i.e., the expected number of visits to \( y \) for a random walk started at \( x \); if the walk is stopped at \( Z \), we count only those visits that occur strictly before visiting \( Z \). Show that for any pair of vertices \( x \) and \( y \),

\[
C_x G(x, y) = C_y G(y, x).
\]

61. Consider an electrical network \( G \) with a vertex \( a \) and a set of vertices \( Z \) that does not include \( a \). When a voltage is imposed so that a unit current flows from \( a \) to \( Z \), show that the expected total number of times an edge \( (x, y) \) is crossed by a random walk starting at \( a \) and absorbed at \( Z \) equals \( C_{xy}(V_x + V_y) \).
62. Consider an electrical network $G$ with a vertex $a$ and a set of vertices $Z$ that does not include $a$. Show that $E_a[T_Z] = \sum_{x \in V} C(x) V_x$ when a voltage is imposed so that a unit current flows from $a$ to $Z$.

63. Let $G$ be a network such that $\gamma := \sum_{e \in G} C_e < \infty$ (for example, $G$ could be finite). For any vertex $a \in G$, show that the expected time for a random walk started at $a$ to return to $a$ is $2\gamma/C_a$.

64. Consider an electrical network $G$ with a vertex $a$. Show that $\lim_n C(a \leftrightarrow Z_n)$ is the same for any sequence $\langle G_n \rangle$ that exhausts $G$.

65. Let $G$ be a network such that $\gamma := \sum_{e \in G} C_e < \infty$ and let $a$ and $z$ be two vertices of $G$. Let $x \sim y$ in $G$. Show that the expected number of transitions from $x$ to $y$ for a random walk started at $a$ and stopped at the first return to $a$ that occurs after visiting $z$ is $C_{xy} R(a \leftrightarrow z)$. This is, of course, invariant under multiplication of the edge conductances by a constant.

66. Let $G$ be a network such that $\gamma := \sum_{e \in G} C_e < \infty$ and let $a$ and $z$ be two vertices of $G$. Show that the expected time for a random walk started at $a$ to visit $z$ and then return to $a$, the so-called “commute time” between $a$ and $z$, is $2\gamma R(a \leftrightarrow z)$.

67. In the following networks, each edge has unit conductance.

\[ \text{What are } P_x[T_x < T_z], P_a[T_x < T_z], \text{ and } P_z[T_x < T_a]? \]

\[ \text{What is } C(a \leftrightarrow z)? \text{ (Or: show a sequence of transformations that could be used to calculate } C(a \leftrightarrow z).) \]
What is $C(a \leftrightarrow z)$? (Or: show a sequence of transformations that could be used to calculate $C(a \leftrightarrow z)$.)

68. Find a (finite) graph that can’t be reduced to a single edge by the four network transformations.

69. Let $G$ be a connected graph with $N$ edges and two vertices $a$ and $z$ of degree one with the same neighbor. Show that for simple random walk on $G$, $E_a[T_z] = 2N$.

70. p. 287, 5.3(b): Show that a continuous-time Markov chain is regular, given (a) that $\nu_i < M < \infty$ for all $i$ or (b) that the discrete-time Markov chain with transition probabilities $P_{ij}$ is irreducible and recurrent.
    Note: do (a), but hand in only (b).

71. p. 287, 5.6: Verify the formula

$$A(t) = a_0 + \int_0^t X(s) ds,$$

given in Example 5.3(B).

72. p. 286, 5.1: A population of organisms consists of both male and female members. In a small colony any particular male is likely to mate with any particular female in any time interval of length $h$, with probability $\lambda h + o(h)$. Each mating immediately produces one offspring, equally likely to be male or female. Let $N_1(t)$ and $N_2(t)$ denote the number of males and females in the population at $t$. Derive the parameters of the continuous-time Markov chain $\{N_1(t), N_2(t)\}$. 
73. Consider a Poisson process of rate 1 such that each event is classified as type \(i\) with probability \(\alpha_i\) (\(i = 0, 1\) and \(\alpha_0 + \alpha_1 = 1\)). Suppose that we put an event at time 0 that is classified as type \(i\) with probability \(p_i\). Show that the two-state Markov chain with state \(i\) equal to type \(i\) and that changes state when the events of the Poisson process change type has transition rates \(q_{01} = \alpha_1\) and \(q_{10} = \alpha_0\). Use this connection to show that

\[
P[\text{the chain is in state 0 at time } t] = p_0 e^{-t} + (1 - e^{-t})\alpha_0.
\]

(This last equation could also be proved by using Example 5.4(a), but that is not what you are being asked to do here.)

74. p. 322, 6.3: Verify that \(X_n/m^n, n \geq 1\), is a martingale when \(X_n\) is the size of the \(n\)th generation of a branching process whose mean number of offspring per individual is \(m\).

75. p. 322, 6.4: Consider the Markov chain which at each transition either goes up 1 with probability \(p\) or down 1 with probability \(q = 1 - p\). Argue that \((q/p)^{S_n}, n \geq 1\), is a martingale.

**Exercise not to Hand In:** p. 323, 6.7: Let \(X_1, \ldots\) be a sequence of independent and identically distributed random variables with mean 0 and variance \(\sigma^2\). Let \(S_n = \sum_{i=1}^n X_i\) and show that \(\{Z_n, n \geq 1\}\) is a martingale when

\[
Z_n = S_n^2 - n\sigma^2.
\]

76. p. 323, 6.10: Consider successive flips of a coin having probability \(p\) of landing heads. Use a martingale argument to compute the expected number of flips until the following sequences appear:

(a) HHTTHHT
(b) HTHTHTH

77. p. 323, 6.11: Consider a gambler who at each gamble is equally likely to either win or lose one unit. Suppose the gambler will quit playing when his winnings are either \(A\) or \(-B, A > 0, B > 0\). Use an appropriate martingale to show that the expected number of bets is \(AB\).

78. Suppose \(P[H] = p\). Calculate the chance that HTHT appears before THTT.
79. Let \( X \) be 2 with probability \( p \) and \(-1\) with probability \( 1 - p \), where \( p > 1/3 \). Let \( \langle S_n \rangle \) be the corresponding random walk, \( S_n := \sum_{i=1}^{n} X_i \), and \( N \) be the first time that the random walk is positive. Find the distribution of \( S_N \), \( E[S_N] \), and \( E[N] \).

80. p. 399, 8.2: Let \( W(t) = X(a^2t)/a \) for \( a > 0 \). Verify that \( W(t) \) is also Brownian motion. (Note: \( X(t) \) is standard Brownian motion.)

81. Let \( \langle X(t) : t \geq 0 \rangle \) be standard Brownian motion. Fix \( r > 0 \) and define \( W(u) := X(r - u) - X(r) \) for \( u \in [0, r] \). Argue that \( \langle W(u) : 0 \leq u \leq r \rangle \) has the same distribution as \( \langle X(t) : 0 \leq t \leq r \rangle \).

82. p. 399, 8.1: Let \( Y(t) = tX(1/t) \).

(a) What is the distribution of \( Y(t) \)?

(b) Compute \( \text{Cov}(Y(s), Y(t)) \).

(c) Argue that \( \{Y(t), t \geq 0\} \) is also Brownian motion.

(d) Let
\[
T = \inf\{t > 0 ; X(t) = 0\}.
\]
Using (c) present an argument that
\[
P[T = 0] = 1.
\]
(Note: \( X(t) \) is standard Brownian motion, \( Y(0) \equiv 0 \), and you do not need to show that \( Y(0^+) = 0 \) a.s.)

83. p. 400, 8.7: Let \( \{X(t), t \geq 0\} \) denote Brownian motion. Find the distribution of:

(a) \( |X(t)| \).

(b) \( \min_{0 \leq s \leq t} X(s) \).

(c) \( \max_{0 \leq s \leq t} X(s) - X(t) \).

84. Let \( \langle X(t) \rangle \) be standard Brownian motion, \( a, b > 0 \), \( \mu \in \mathbb{R} \). Let \( L_y \) be the line through \((0, y)\) with slope \( \mu \). Let \( \tau_y \) be the first time \( \langle (t, X(t)) \rangle \) hits \( L_y \), i.e.,
\[
\tau_y := \inf\{t ; (t, X(t)) \in L_y\}.
\]
Prove that \( \tau_a \land \tau_{-b} < \infty \) a.s. and calculate \( P_0[\tau_a < \tau_{-b}] \).
85. Suppose that $X_1, \ldots, X_n$ are random variables. Show that the following conditions are equivalent:

(a) $\forall a_1, \ldots, a_n \in \mathbb{R} \sum_{k=1}^n a_k X_k$ is a normal random variable;

(b) $(X_k; 1 \leq k \leq n)$ has a multivariate normal distribution.

86. p. 402, 8.21: Verify that if $\{B(t), t \geq 0\}$ is standard Brownian motion, then $\{Y(t), t \geq 0\}$ is a martingale with mean 1, when $Y(t) = \exp\{cB(t) - c^2 t/2\}$. (Here, $c \in \mathbb{R}$.)

87. Let $\langle X(t) \rangle$ be a Brownian motion with parameter $(\mu, \sigma^2)$, where $\mu \neq 0$, $X(0) \equiv 0$, and let $a, b > 0$. Use Exercise 86 with $c := -2\mu/\sigma$ to show that

$$E\left[\exp\left\{-2\mu X(T_a \wedge T_b)/\sigma^2 \right\}\right] = 1.$$ 

Use this to give a new calculation of $P[T_a < T_b]$.

88. Use the martingale $\langle X(t) - \mu t \rangle$ to calculate $E[T_a \wedge T_b]$ for a Brownian motion starting at 0 with drift $\mu \neq 0$ and $a, b > 0$. Show that for standard Brownian motion, $E[T_a \wedge T_b] = ab$.

89. Show that $X \succeq Y \iff \forall a \ P[X \geq a] \geq P[Y \geq a] \iff X^+ \succeq Y^+$ and $X^- \preceq Y^-$. 